



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

ATLASES, MAPS, & CLASS-BOOKS,

PUBLISHED BY

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON.

SERIES OF SCHOOL ATLASES,

EDITED BY WILLIAM HUGHES, F.R.G.S.

- | | |
|--|--------------|
| 1. PHILIPS' PREPARATORY ATLAS, containing
16 Maps. Crown 4to, full colored, in neat cover. | s. d.
0 6 |
| 2. PHILIPS' PREPARATORY OUTLINE
ATLAS. 16 Maps. Crown 4to, in neat cover .. | 0 6 |
| 3. PHILIPS' PREPARATORY ATLAS OF
BLANK PROJECTIONS. 16 Maps. Crown 4to,
in neat cover | 0 6 |
| 4. PHILIPS' ELEMENTARY ATLAS FOR
YOUNG LEARNERS. 16 Maps, full colored.
Small 4to, in neat cover | 0 6 |
| 5. PHILIPS' ELEMENTARY OUTLINE ATLAS.
16 Maps. Small 4to, in neat cover | 0 6 |
| 6. PHILIPS' INITIATORY ATLAS FOR YOUNG
LEARNERS. 12 Maps. 16mo, plain, 3d.;
colored | 0 6 |
| 7. PHILIPS' FIRST SCHOOL ATLAS. New
and enlarged edition. Containing 24 Maps, full
colored, bound in cloth | 1 0 |
| 8. PHILIPS' SHILLING ATLAS OF MODERN
GEOGRAPHY. 12 Maps. Imp. 4to, illustrated
cover | 1 0 |
| 9. PHILIPS' ATLAS FOR BEGINNERS. New and
improved edition, with Index. Crown 4to, cloth.. | 2 6 |
| 10. PHILIPS' HANDY SCHOOL ATLAS. 32 Maps,
with Consulting Index. Crown 8vo, cloth, lettered | 2 6 |
| 11. PHILIPS' YOUNG SCHOLAR'S ATLAS. New
edition. Containing 24 Maps. Imperial 4to,
bound in cloth | 2 6 |
| 12. PHILIPS' YOUNG STUDENT'S ATLAS. New
edition. Containing 36 Maps. Imp. 4to, bound
in cloth | 3 6 |
| 13. PHILIPS' INTRODUCTORY SCHOOL
ATLAS. 18 Maps, with Consulting Index. New
edition, Imperial 8vo, bound in cloth | 3 6 |

George Philip and Son

Liverpool.

George Philip and Son, Publishers, London and Liverpool.

SERIES OF SCHOOL ATLASES—Continued.

14.	PHILIPS' SELECT SCHOOL ATLAS.	24	s.	d.
	Maps, with Consulting Index. New and improved edition. Imperial 8vo, bound in cloth ...	5	0	
15.	PHILIPS' STUDENT'S ATLAS. Containing 38 Maps, with Index. Imp. 8vo, strongly bound in cloth	7	6	
16.	PHILIPS' COMPREHENSIVE SCHOOL ATLAS, containing 37 Modern and 7 Ancient Maps, with Index. Imp. 8vo, strongly hf.-bd., cloth sides	10	6	
17.	PHILIPS' PHYSICAL ATLAS FOR BEGINNERS. 12 Maps. Crown 4to, in stiff cover ...	1	0	
18.	The same Book, bound in cloth, lettered ...	1	6	
19.	PHILIPS' SCHOOL ATLAS OF PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY. Imperial 8vo, bound in cloth...	10	6	
20.	HUGHES' TRAINING SCHOOL ATLAS, a series of 16 Physical Maps. Med. fol., cloth, lettered	15	0	
21.	PHILIPS' SCHOOL ATLAS OF SCRIPTURE GEOGRAPHY, 12 Maps. Crown 4to, stiff cover	1	0	
22.	The same Book, bound in cloth, lettered ...	1	6	
23.	PHILIPS' SMALLER SCRIPTURE ATLAS. 12 Maps, illustrated cover, 6d.; cloth, lettered ...	1	0	
24.	PHILIPS' SCHOOL ATLAS OF CLASSICAL GEOGRAPHY, 18 Maps, with Consulting Index of Ancient and Modern Names. Med. 4to, cloth.	5	0	
25.	PHILIPS' HANDY CLASSICAL ATLAS. Containing 18 Maps. Medium 8vo, bound in cloth...	2	6	
26.	PHILIPS' SCHOOL ATLAS OF AUSTRALIA. Crown 4to, bound in cloth ...	2	0	
27.	PHILIPS' SCHOOL ATLAS OF NEW ZEALAND. Crown 4to, cloth...	2	0	
28.	PHILIPS' IMPERIAL ATLAS OF OUTLINE MAPS. Two Series, each containing 12 Maps, in cover, each ...	1	0	
29.	PHILIPS' IMPERIAL ATLAS OF BLANK PROJECTIONS. Two Series, each containing 12 Maps, in cover, each ...	1	0	
30.	PHILIPS' OUTLINE ATLAS FOR BEGINNERS. Two Series, each containing 16 Maps, neat cover, each ...	1	0	
31.	PHILIPS' BLANK PROJECTIONS FOR BEGINNERS. Two Series, each containing 16 Maps, cover ...	1	0	

George Philip and Son, Publishers, London and Liverpool.



600075202M

D
HISTOR

ENGL

16

DAVIES'
HISTORICAL MANUALS

ENGLISH HISTORY

1603-1690

2/-

HISTORY OF ENGLAND,

1603-1690.

JAMES I.

Dates of Birth, Accession, and Death.—1566 (at Edinburgh), March 24, 1603-1625, March 27, (at Theobalds, Herts,—of ague and gout, aggravated by his refusal to take medicine, and by unskilful treatment).

Descent.—Only child of Mary, Queen of Scots, by Lord Darnley.

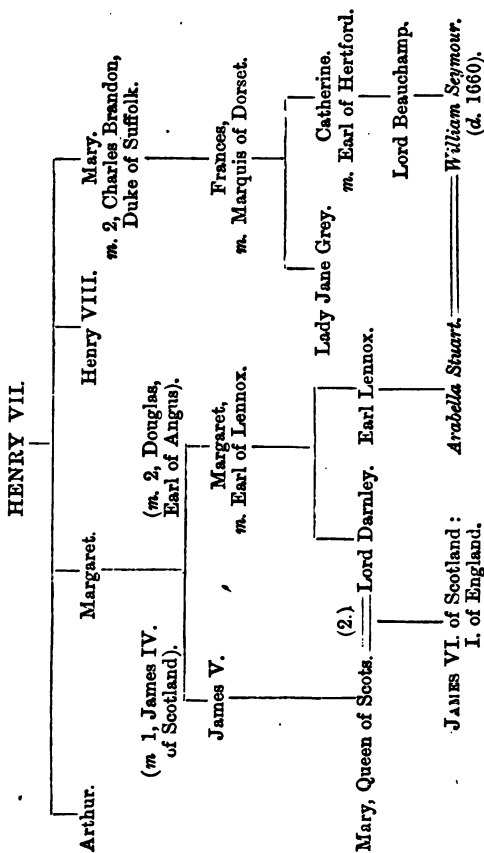
The table on next page will show his,—and also Arabella Stuart's, and William Seymour's,—descent from Henry VII.

Became King (James VI.) of Scotland, when about a year old, his mother being compelled to resign, in consequence of his father's murder,—educated chiefly by Geo. Buchanan,—entered into alliance with Elizabeth, 1585, receiving £5,000 a year pension, continuing, from prudential motives, the connexion spite of his mother's execution. During his reign in Scotland two attempts, (one the Raid of Ruthven, successful, and resulting in his captivity for 10 months), were made by the lawless nobles to seize him. Chosen by Elizabeth as her successor.

Married, 1589, Anne, daughter of Frederick II. of Denmark (1575-1619).

Married James by proxy, bringing as part dower the Islands of Orkney and Shetland. Detained by storms on her way to England in Norway, whither James went to fetch her. Took no share in politics,—spent the latter part of her life in seclusion, through illness. Wanting in intelligence and education, gay, frivolous, good-natured; extravagant.

Issue.—Henry (a very accomplished and promising prince, *d.* 1612)—Charles I.—Elizabeth (*m.* Frederick, Elector Palatine)—Robert, and Mary (died young).



Claim to the Throne.—*Good by descent : bad legally.* He was the nearest living lineal descendant of Henry VII., and consequently the hereditary successor to Elizabeth, the preceding sovereign ; but Parliament had granted Henry VIII. the power to regulate the succession, which he had done by a will ordering that, if Edward, Mary, and Elizabeth died childless, the crown should pass to the heirs of his younger sister Mary, Duchess of Suffolk—thus excluding the Scotch branch, descended from his elder sister Margaret, and to which James belonged.

The legal heir, at James's accession, was, according to Henry VIII.'s will, *William Seymour*, who was the nearest living representative of the Suffolk family.

The crowns of England and Scotland were united in James, who thus became the *First King of Great Britain*: the complete union of the two kingdoms was not, however, effected till 1707, by the ACT OF UNION.

Character.—Of medium height, stoutish, awkward in gait (through weak knees); slovenly; mean, and undignified, while pompous, in address.

Of excellent natural abilities; shrewd, sagacious; but conceited, obstinate, selfish, crafty, pusillanimous, and childishly weak in his favoritism.

"The most learned fool in Christendom," his scholarship being spoiled by vanity and pedantry: an ardent believer in, and student of, demonology and witchcraft; esteemed himself an all-accomplished theologian.

An extraordinary mixture of sense and folly, and mass of contradictions: "no prince was ever so much exposed to the extremes of calumny and flattery, of satire and panegyric."

Possessed with an overweening sense of his Divine right and prerogative, whence, as transmitted to his descendants, came the Civil War and the Revolution.

Sincerely religious; on the whole, a good husband and father, though *soft* in the latter respect.

WARS.

1. In Aid of the Elector Palatine.—The Bohemian Protestants, having revolted from the Emperor Matthias, on account of his intolerance and unconstitutional government, would not own his successor, Ferdinand II., but

made Frederick, the Elector Palatine, their sovereign. Austria and Spain allied to recover Bohemia for Ferdinand, and to drive Frederick from his own dominions. The English were eager to assist the Elector Palatine; but *James sent his son-in-law only 4000 troops.*

Frederick was defeated at the *Battle of Prague*, 1620, and soon after lost all his territory. The contest, however, lasted from 1618 to 1648, and is hence called the THIRTY YEARS' WAR. It was ended by the PEACE OF WESTPHALIA, which restored to the Elector the greater part of the Palatinate.

2. With Spain, 1624.—A marriage treaty had been arranged between Prince Charles and the Spanish Infanta. Buckingham induced James to allow him and the Prince to visit the Court of Spain *incogniti*, in order that Charles might see his future wife. Buckingham's haughty manners made him disliked by the Spaniards, and he, in revenge, prevailed upon Charles to break his engagement. At the next meeting of Parliament after their return to England, Buckingham so misrepresented matters to the Lords as to convey the impression that Spain had grossly insulted England. The result was a declaration of war. Large supplies were voted, and 12,000 troops, under Count Mansfield, were sent to the aid of the Elector Palatine. Half the number died in transit, owing to the overcrowding of the transports, so that, on reaching the Palatinate, Mansfield was obliged to remain passive and useless.

LOTS AND REBELLIONS.

1. The Main Plot, 1603.—The chief *conspirators* were Lord Cobham, his brother, George Brooke, and, perhaps, Sir Walter Raleigh. Their *object* appears to have been to raise Arabella Stuart to the throne, with the assistance of Spain.

2. The Bye Plot, or "Surprising Treason," 1603.—The chief *conspirators* were Sir Griffin Markham, a zealous Papist; Clarke and Watson, two Roman Catholic priests; George Brooke, who was thus engaged in this and in the "Main;" and Lord Grey. Their *object* was to seize James, and alter the Government,—the Roman Catholics engaged intending to obtain, as one of these changes, toleration for
" sect.

Cecil knew of the progress of both plots, and, before any active steps were taken by the conspirators, he caused them to be arrested and tried. All were found guilty of high treason. Brooke, Clarke, and Watson were executed. Raleigh and the rest were kept in prison.

3. The Gunpowder Plot, 1605.—The chief *conspirators* were Robert Catesby, Thomas and Robert Winter, John and Christopher Wright, Sir Harry Percy, Rookwood, Grant, Bates, Sir Everard Digby Francis Tresham, and Guido Fawkes. Three Papist priests—Garnet, Greenway, and Gerard—were privy to it. The *object* of the plot was to blow up James and his Parliament at their re-assembling, as the great step towards restoring Roman Catholicism.

Parliament was to have met in February. The conspirators took a house adjoining the Lords, which they commenced undermining. Parliament was, however, further prorogued till the autumn, and they accordingly ceased operations for a time. Meanwhile, a cellar under the House of Lords was to let; the conspirators took it, and stored in it thirty-six barrels of gunpowder, which they concealed by means of faggots. The *5th of November* being finally fixed for the opening of Parliament, the following arrangements were made:—Fawkes was to fire the powder by a slow match, after lighting which he was to escape;—Percy was to obtain possession of Prince Charles, whom they meant to succeed his father;—and Digby and a party of his friends—assembled, on pretext of hunt, at Dunchurch—were to proceed to Lord Harrington's seat, near Coventry, and seize the Princess Elizabeth.

At the end of October, Lord Monteagle received a letter (doubtless from Tresham, his brother-in-law) warning him to absent himself from the Parliament about to assemble, and using the significant words,—“They shall receive a terrible blow this Parliament, and yet they shall not see who hurts them.” When James read the letter he at once grasped its import. On the morning of the 5th the cellar was searched. Fawkes was taken at the door, and all the preparations discovered.

As soon as the other conspirators heard of the arrest of Fawkes, they hastened to Dunchurch; but the gentlemen assembled there refused to join them. They then fled to

Holbeach, where one of them had a house. Here they were attacked by the sheriffs of Warwick and Worcester. Rookwood, Thomas Winter, and Grant were taken ;—Catesby Percy, and the Wrights were shot ;—Bates, Robert Winter, and Digby escaped, but were soon after captured.

Fawkes was meanwhile tortured, and, when he knew that his accomplices had betrayed themselves by their acts subsequent to his arrest, gave full information of the plot.

Digby, Rookwood, Fawkes, Grant, Bates, and the Winters were tried for high treason, condemned, and executed.

Of the priests, Gerard and Greenway escaped ; but Garnet was taken, and executed as an accessory, though he pleaded that it was in the inviolable confidence of confession that he had gained a knowledge of the plot.

A Rising in the Midland Counties, 1607.—Under Reynolds (*alias* Captain Pouch),—to destroy new enclosures of land. Reynolds and others were taken, and executed as traitors.

JAMES'S PARLIAMENTS.

First, (1604–1611).—*Main Events :—*

A contest with James, in consequence of his denying their right of settling disputed elections. The Commons successfully upheld their prerogative.

The passing of harsh laws against Popish recusants. Roman Catholics were ordered to take an oath that they “abhorred, detested, and abjured as impious and heretical, the damnable doctrine that princes excommunicated by the Pope may be deposed, or murdered, by their subjects.”

A consideration of a proposal by James to unite England and Scotland,—decided against, in consequence of the partiality shown by the King towards the Scots.

A protest against levying Custom-dues at the seaports, without the sanction of Parliament.

Second, (the “Addled Parliament”) 1614.

James wanted supplies, and was therefore compelled to assemble the Commons. In order to insure an obedient House, he employed persons, named “*undertakers*,” to manipulate the elections in his favour. They failed, however. The House, on meeting, instead of granting supplies, began to discuss grievances, and James promptly dissolved it.

Third, (1621-1622).—Main Events :—

A declaration against monopolies.

Sir Giles Mompesson impeached for abuse of his monopolies in making gold and silver thread, and in licensing taverns. He was found guilty, and unknighthed.

Lord Bacon impeached for receiving bribes in his office of Lord Chancellor. He was declared guilty, debarred from ever again occupying any official post, fined £40,000, and sentenced to imprisonment during James's pleasure.

Floyd, a Roman Catholic barrister, prosecuted in consequence of a harmless expression of sympathy with the Papists of Prague. He was sentenced to ride through London facing his horse's tail, to be pilloried, branded, whipped, fined, and imprisoned for life.

A contest with James, who denied their right to discuss affairs of State. The Commons entered on their Journals a declaration that "The liberties of Parliament are the undoubted birthright of the subjects of England ; that all matters of debate are fit subjects for discussion there ; that every member has a right to freedom of speech, and that no member can be lawfully imprisoned or molested for his conduct in Parliament, except by order of the House itself."

James tore this record out, dissolved Parliament, and imprisoned Coke, Pym, and other independent members of the House.

Fourth, (1624—James's demise).—Main event :—

The Earl of Middlesex impeached for bribery and other abuses in his office of Lord Treasurer. He was found guilty, debarred from ever again sitting in Parliament, fined £50,000, and sentenced to imprisonment during James's pleasure.

TREATIES.

Peace with Spain and Austria, 1604.—James agreed no more to aid the people of the Netherlands.

ECCLESIASTICAL AND RELIGIOUS AFFAIRS.

Primates.—Whitgift ; Bancroft ; Abbott.

Millenary Petition, 1603.—The Puritans, encouraged by the fact that James had been brought up a Presbyterian, drew up the **MILLENNARY PETITION**,—so called from the expectation that 1000 clergymen would sign

it, and actually bearing the names of 825. It asked for certain reforms in the Church service and ritual, and in the Ecclesiastical Courts. It was presented to James on his accession, and he promised early attention to the matter. The result was the

Hampton Court Conference, Jan. 14, 1604.—Four Puritan clergymen, headed by Dr. J. Reynolds, and sixteen of the other side led by Whitgift, represented the two parties in the Church; the Privy Council, and many of the Court, were present also. The Conference lasted three days.

The main objections which the Puritans urged, at the Conference, against the Church service and ritual, were two—

1.—The use of the words *Priest* and *Absolution*; of the cross in Baptism; of the surplice and cap; and of the ring in marriage.

2.—Confirmation; the private celebration of the Sacraments, in consequence of the allowal of which laymen and females took upon themselves to baptize; questioning infants at Baptism; bowing at the name of Jesus; and reading the Apocrypha.

James sat as president of the Conference, and took the part of the majority,—insulting the Puritans by assertions of their ignorance, and by charges of disloyalty: in consequence, the latter gained little by the assembly. The results were—

1. *Some alterations were made in the Book of Common Prayer.*—The Rubric for Private Baptism was worded so as to exclude all but the clergy from administering it; the Prayer for the Royal Family, some of the special Thanksgivings following the Litany, and the *Doctrine of the Sacraments in the Catechism*, were added.

2. At Dr. Reynold's suggestion, a *New Translation of the Scriptures* was decided upon.

3. The number of the High Commission Court judges was reduced.

A Proclamation issued, by James, against religious innovations, 1604.

Canons, 1604,—framed by Convocation, and pronouncing excommunicate those who left the Church of England, or took exception to any part of the Book of Common Prayer. This led to the suspension of 1500 clergymen.

The Translation of the Bible, 1606-1610.—Fifty-four eminent scholars were chosen for the work ; but only forty-seven were actually engaged in it. Among the principal of these were Dr. J. Reynolds, Dr. Andrews (afterwards Bishop of Winchester), Sir Henry Saville, and William Bedwell. They took the Bishop's Bible as their basis, and, making Westminster, Oxford, and Cambridge the seats of their toil, met at intervals to compare notes.

This new translation was published in 1611, under James's authority, and is hence called **The Authorised Version**.

Two Unitarians burned, 1612,—the last persons executed in England for their religious principles.

The Book of Sports, 1618,—allowing to men and women all kinds of sports, amusements, and revelry, after divine worship on the Sabbath, and to women the practice of decorating the churches with rushes, according to custom. This measure was, professedly, intended to convince the people that Protestantism was not uncongenial and harsh. But it was really a device of the dominant High Church party, whose tendencies were decidedly Popish, to win over the people to their side.

Mild treatment of Roman Catholics—at the close of James's reign. The object was to please Spain, whose Infanta Prince Charles was engaged to marry.

INVENTIONS, DISCOVERIES, AND IMPROVEMENTS.

Logarithms invented, by Napier of Merchiston, about 1614.

Circulation of the Blood discovered by Dr. William Harvey, 1619.

Farthings coined.—The first copper money issued in England.

COMMERCE AND COLONISATION.

The Merchant Adventurers' Company received fresh charters, giving them the monopoly of exporting woollens to Germany and the Netherlands.

The Levant Company was incorporated, for trade with Turkey, Persia, &c.

James Town, Virginia, was founded by a colony sent out by a London company, to which James granted a charter. The enterprise succeeded, owing to the growing of tobacco, and Virginia received a regular constitution, 1621.

The East India Company established factories at Surat, and elsewhere, and received their first powers of governing, being authorised by James to punish their foreign *employés*, 1624.

The Russian Company obtained a charter for fishing in the Northern Seas.

New Plymouth founded by the "Pilgrim Fathers," 1620.—One hundred and twenty Independents, who had been living at Leyden, out of the way of persecution, sailed from Plymouth, in the *Mayflower*, of 180 tons. They reached America, after a tedious passage, and anchored in Cape Cod Harbour: having fixed on a suitable site, they founded the town of New Plymouth. This may be regarded as the origin of *New England*.

Bahamas and Barbadoes colonised.

IRISH AFFAIRS.

Ulster Colonised, 1611.—Large grants of land were made on easy terms,—London receiving a considerable tract, on condition of spending £20,000 on it, and building two towns (Londonderry and Coleraine). It was contemplated to maintain an army in Ulster; and, to meet that expense, the title of "*Baronet*" was instituted, and sold for £1095. Two hundred was to be the maximum; but only one hundred were created.

The army was not sent, and James had the money.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS.

France.	Germany.	Spain.	Popes.
HENRY IV.	RODOLPH II.	PHILIP III.	CLEMENT VIII.
LOUIS XIII.	MATTHIAS.	PHILIP IV.	LEO IX.
	FERDINAND II.		PAUL V.
			GREGORY XV.
			URBAN VIII.

CHARLES I.

Dates.—1600 (at Dunfermline), March 27, 1625–1649, Jan. 30, (executed at Whitehall).

Descent.—Second, but eldest surviving, son of James I.

Married (1625), Henrietta Maria (1609-69), daughter of Henry IV., of France, and Mary de Medici, being left (by the assassination of her father, the year after her birth), to whose sole care, she imbibed those "foolish notions of the infallibility of sovereigns" which had so pernicious an influence over her as Queen. Her religious nurture was entrusted to a Carmelite nun, whose training was successful as far "as the outer forms of" Roman "Catholicism" go : her secular education was slight, and superficial. At fifteen, she was beautiful, gay, and high-spirited.

Charles saw her first at a court-ball, at Paris, on his way, in undiscovered disguise, with Buckingham, to visit Madrid, with a view to espousing the Infanta of Spain, and conceived for her an instant passion, which led to his proposing for her, on the breaking off of the Spanish match : he was accepted, and a marriage-treaty concluded, before James I.'s death, the union not taking place, however, till the June after Charles's accession.

Her levity, her attachment to the Romish Church, and her imperious spirit, which led her to influence the King towards a violent and arbitrary policy, made her extremely unpopular with the English generally, who attributed to her many of her husband's worst measures.

Just before the breaking out of the Civil War, she, with a view, also, to escaping impeachment, went to the Continent, to seek assistance for Charles, in alliances and *matériel*, and sold, in Holland, the Crown-jewels, with whose proceeds she purchased a cargo of war-munitions, part, only, of which reached the King. She returned to England, with supplies, 1643, but, in the following year, after the birth of her youngest daughter, at Exeter, fled, finally, to France, where, at Paris, she remained, in great distress and indigence, until her husband's execution, after which, she espoused Jermyn, Earl of St. Albans.

At the Restoration, she revisited England, residing, for a time, at Somerset House.

She died at the Convent of Chaillot, from the effects of a soporific potion, administered to her, by her physicians, while she labored under an, apparently, not dangerous illness. Bossuet pronounced her funeral oration.

Her *Correspondence* with her husband (to whom she was profoundly attached), has been published.

She was never crowned, owing to her unwillingness to compromise Charles, which, she being a Romanist, must have been the result.

Issue.—Charles II.; Mary, *m.*, William, Prince of Orange (from which union sprang William III.); Henry, Duke of Gloucester, *d.* 1660; Elizabeth, *d.* (of a broken heart in Carisbrooke Castle), 1650—wrote a pathetic account of her last interview with her father; Henrietta Maria, *d.* 1670, *m.* Philip, Duke of Orleans: *in the descendants of Anna Maria, offspring of this marriage, by her husband, Victor Amadeus, Duke of Savoy, is to be found the direct heir of the Stuart Line*; another daughter, *d.* young.

At 4 years old, made Duke of York, and became heir-apparent on the death of his brother, Prince Henry, 1612, not, however, receiving the title of "Prince of Wales" till 1614. His education was most sedulously cared for by his father, who himself undertook the political training of his successor.

Claim.—*Not good*, since William Seymour, the legal heir under Henry VIII.'s will, was still living; but his father's undisturbed possession of the crown gave Charles a better right to it than James himself had.

Character.—Of middle height, strong, and well-proportioned, excelling in all manly exercises, and patient of fatigue and privation; hair dark, forehead high, features handsome, expression sweetly grave—approaching the Saturnine; manners somewhat ungracious.

Of strong good sense, and fine intellect; learned, especially in Theology; highly accomplished, with a marked *penchant* for the Fine Arts, of which he was an extravagant patron.

Brave, high-spirited to obstinacy, yet most pliable when complaisantly treated; meek, and moderate, naturally, but stern, hasty, and precipitate when mounted on his political hobby; most beneficent, and capable of warm attachments; partial, and injudicious; tyrannical, owing

to his unfortunate political education by his father and Buckingham, and his wife's counsels, this, and his gross and lamentable insincerity, being the sources of his ruin.

Pious, to superstition, and eminently virtuous; strictly temperate and chaste; a fond husband and father.

In fine, a generally excellent character, for the position of a private gentleman, but totally unfitted, naturally and by bringing-up, for a royal position, especially that of a Constitutional King.

WARS.

1. An Expedition against Spain, 1625.—Charles's first Parliament having refused to grant the funds necessary for carrying on the war with Spain, he raised by illegal means sufficient money to equip eighty ships, which were sent, under Lord Wimbledon's command, to seize several valuable galleons lying in Cadiz harbour, and to intercept those homeward-bound. The Spanish vessels escaped, and the expedition consequently failed. Peace was made with Spain in 1630.

2. With France, 1627-1630.

Cause,—obscure: Buckingham appears to have urged Charles to it.

Events.—Buckingham undertook an *expedition to relieve* the Huguenots of *Rochelle*, who were besieged by Richelieu. He landed on the Island of Rhé, but, failing in an attack on the main fort, abandoned the enterprise with immense loss of men, 1627.

Next year, while Buckingham was at Portsmouth organising another expedition for the same purpose, he was assassinated by Felton.

Earl Lindsey succeeded him, and made a fruitless effort to raise the siege of *Rochelle*, which capitulated soon after.

Peace was made with France in 1630.

The Civil War, (called by the Royalists "**The Great Rebellion**"), 1642-1651.

Cause.—Charles's tyrannical and unconstitutional government, which, from the commencement of his reign, had been gradually alienating his people from him, and preparing them for hostile measures. The events that

brought matters to a crisis, and were the *immediate cause* of the war, were as follows :—

Early in 1642 *Charles*, in order to overawe the refractory Commons, *demande*d the surrender of six of the most troublesome members, on a charge of treason. They were not given up, and on the following day the King *came to the house*, accompanied by a considerable number of armed men, *to seize them*. They were, however, designedly absent.

This violation of the constitution so alarmed the Commons, that when, a short time after, Charles sent from Hampton, whither he had retired, to ask them to formulate their demands, they *requeste*d the control of the Tower, the royal fortresses, and the militia. *The King refused, and war became inevitable.*

Preliminary Events.—Charles sent his Queen to Holland to pledge the crown jewels, and seek assistance from the continental powers.

Parliament passed measures for giving them control of the militia, and for placing the country into a state of defence.

Charles, in April, *endeavour*ed to capture the store of arms in

Hull, advancing thither with only 20 attendants, trusting that the Governor, awed by the Royal presence, and reassured by the smallness of the party, would grant him entrance, and, so, enable him to take measures for seizing the town. Hotham, however, *refused admission.*

Charles, to meet this move, *summon*ed the county gentry to York, *to form a guard for his person.*

The response to this appeal was a gathering from that shire, and other parts of the country, of 600 supporters, amongst whom were 32 of the Upper, and over 60 of the Lower, House, including Falkland, and Hyde.

This act of the King's was at once declared, by both Houses, *a violation of the popular trust, and of his Coronation Oath, and as subversive of the Government,—and vigorous steps were taken to constitute a Parliamentary army*, the forces levying for Irish service being appropriated, and enlisting being pushed vigorously forward. In London, the popular cause met with enthusiastic support: 4,000 men volunteered in one day,—and immense quantities

of valuables were poured into the Parliamentary treasury. The commander-in-chief of the revolutionary army was bestowed upon the Earl of Essex, while the Earl of Warwick was entrusted with the fleet.

Meanwhile, part of a cargo of munitions, sent by the Queen from the Continent, reached Charles's hands.

The ultimatum to him, by the Commons, at Hampton, being, with the advice of his counsellors, indignantly rejected, by Charles, the last chance of a peaceful solution of difficulties vanished, and both sides proceeded to draw the sword.

Charles, having collected his available forces, marched South, until he arrived at Nottingham, where he erected the Royal Standard, Aug. 22, 1642,—a virtual declaration of hostilities: the weather being stormy, the flag was blown down, which was regarded as a serious omen. His condition, at this juncture, was sorry in the extreme: he had only about 800 cavalry, and an infantry of 300, together with the Yorkshire train-bands; while, for want of cattle to draw them, the greater portion of his feeble artillery had been left behind at York,—and at Northampton, whither it had advanced, from London, to meet him, lay the Parliamentary main-body, 10,000 strong. Had the latter now marched upon them, the King's forces must have been effectually dissipated, but Essex had, as yet, received no orders from Parliament.

The weakness of the monarch's forces led his advisers to suggest, and him to consent to, an attempt at reconciliation with the Parliament. Accordingly, the Earl of Southampton, Sir John Colepepper, and Sir William Uvedale, hastened to London, with proposals for a treaty, which the Houses refused to entertain, unless Charles should take down his standard, and withdraw his proclamations. To this he would not consent, so that these negotiations, (as well as a second similar essay), proved fruitless.

Parliament now scored their first two successes, in the capture of

Portsmouth, (the best fortified town in the kingdom), owing to the non-vigilance of the Governor, Goring,—and in the compelling to retire into Wales, a Royalist levy, raised in Somersetshire.

All the scattered corps of the *Parliamentary forces*, now, by orders, *concentrated at Northampton*, to the number of 15,000, Essex joining them, and taking the command. *The King retired*, for the purpose of augmenting his strength, to Derby ; and, thence, to Shrewsbury, within a day's march of which place, at Wellington, he made a declaration, to his followers, that he would uphold the Protestant faith, the laws of the land, and the *just liberties and privileges of Parliament*. Arrived at *Shrewsbury*, he *mustered his forces*, and found them, with recent additions there and by the way, amount to 10,000 men.

His generals were the Earl of Lindsay, commander-in-chief ; his nephew, Prince Rupert (who, with his brother, Maurice, had, on the breaking out of the contest with the Parliament, come and placed their swords at their uncle's disposal), over the cavalry, generally, with Sir Arthur Aston at the head of the dragoons ; Sir Jacob Astley, commanding the foot ; and Sir John Heydon, the artillery.

The materials of which the two armies thus ranged against one another in civil strife were, respectively, composed, were widely dissimilar, but, while a variety of motives actuated the supporters of the King, his opponents were swayed with but one single and united purpose. The latter consisted chiefly of the people of London, the town populations, and the yeomen of the country, these classes having the greatest interest in supporting the Parliament in its opposition to monopolies, illegal taxations, and arbitrary measures generally,—and of the Liberal portion of the aristocracy: on this side, too, were, naturally, arrayed the powerful Presbyterian body, and other Nonconformists. The aim of this party was the securing and maintaining of civil and religious liberty. The Royalists embraced about three-fourths of the nobility and gentry, all influenced by a feeling of loyalty, and a dread of democracy, and the majority, moreover, attached to Constitutional liberty, and supporting Charles in the hope of his “submitting to a legal and limited government,” while a small minority had no higher feeling than ambition, and the attraction of the gay and adventurous life of the camp,—and the devotees of the Established Church, holding the high monarchical doctrines then so much in vogue amongst the clergy. At first, Romanists

were excluded from the Royal Service, but were, afterwards, when necessity began to pinch, eagerly received by the King.

Battles, &c., of the Civil War:—

1642:—

“First blood” was drawn in a cavalry *skirmish* at

Powick Bridge (near Worcester), **Sept. 23**, *Royalists victorious.*

Royalist commander.—Prince Rupert,—who had been detached from the main body to watch Essex, who was advancing on Worcester.

Parly. commander.—Earl of Essex, of whose force, however, only a body of horse was engaged, and utterly routed,—the encounter, however, though inoperative in preventing Essex entering Worcester, greatly raising the prestige of the Royalists. Rupert, after the engagement, returned to his uncle.

Essex remaining supine at Worcester, the King marched from Shrewsbury to London, hoping, thus, to bring on an action, nor was he disappointed, for the Parliamentarians followed, and encountered him in the *battle of*

Edgehill (Warwickshire), **Oct. 23**.—*Indecisive*, but on the whole advantageous to the Royalists, since it decided numbers of trimming gentry to join the King.

R. comrs.—Charles I.; Rupert; Lindsay, (mortally wounded, and taken).

P. comrs.—Essex; Sir Jas. Ramsay; Sir Wm. Balfour.

The King attacked, late in the day, and a fierce struggle ensued, during which egregious blunders in generalship were committed, on both sides, Rupert giving ample and injurious proof of his dashing, reckless bravery, as well as fondness for spoil, which eventually so greatly damaged his uncle's cause. After a slaughter, pretty evenly proportioned, of a total variously estimated at from 5,000 to 1,200, night ended the contest, and witnessed the two armies bivouacking on the field, where morning found them indisposed to resume hostilities. Essex, first, withdrew to Warwick, Charles following suit, but to his old quarters, whence, however, he speedily resumed his advance on London,—*took*

Banbury, a few days after, and, thence, marched to, and

took possession of Oxford, the only town altogether devoted to himself. He proceeded next to, *and entered*

Reading, Martin, the Governor, in the Parliamentary interest, *fleeing*, in panic, with the garrison, to London.

Parliament, alarmed at the King's approach upon the slenderly protected metropolis, while their own main body lagged behind, voted an address for a treaty. Charles yielded to their proposal so far as to appoint Windsor as the place of a conference on the subject, but, nevertheless, pursued his way Londonwards.

Meanwhile, however, **Essex**, putting on a spurt, reached, *and entered*

London, posting his forces so as to bar the enemy's ingress. The King came close at his heels, and, with his nephew's command, endeavoured to make a way into the City, under cover of a fog, the attempt bringing on the *battle of*

Brentford, Nov. 12.—Royalists victorious.

R. com.—**Eupert.**

P. com.—**Colonel Denzil Hollis.**

Advancing by way of Brentford, the Prince encountered three regiments there stationed, which he succeeded in driving out, with a loss to them of many slain and 500 prisoners: the design of entering London was, however, frustrated by the opposition met with.

The City train-bands joined the forces of Essex, swelling them to 29,000 men,—a vastly more numerous army than that of Charles, who, after remaining for some time encamped in face of the foe, realised the hopelessness of any attempt on the capital, and, winter approaching, retired to Oxford.

During the winter, (1642–1643), negotiations went on between the King and the Parliament, but came to nothing.

1643:—

Early in the year, the Queen landed, at Burlington, with men and munitions.

In the S.W., Centre, W., and S.—

Sir Ralph Hopton, at the head of a Royalist body, reduced Cornwall to obedience, fighting the *battle of*

Braddock Down, Jan. 19.—Royalists victorious.

R. com.—Sir Ralph Hopton.

P. com.—Ruthven, Governor of Plymouth,—and the battle of

Stratton, May 16.—*Royalists victorious.*

R. com.—Sir R. Hopton.

P. com.—Earl of Stamford.

300 Parliamentarians were slain, and 1,700 taken.

Early in the year, occurred the unimportant battle of **Hopton Heath** (near Stafford), **March 19.**—*Royalists victorious.*

R. com.—Earl of Northampton (slain).

P. com.—Sir Jno. Gell.

The main body of the popular forces opened the campaign by the siege of

Reading, April 17–27.—*Parliament victorious,* the town capitulating.

P. com.—Essex.

R. com.—(1). Colonel Fielding; (2). Sir Arthur Aston.

After this exploit, Essex found his forces dwindling away, which compelled him to act on the defensive, tactics imitated by Charles, the only engagements between the main armies being a *skirmish* at

Chinnor (Oxon), June 17.—*Royalists victorious,* driving in the enemy's outposts.

R. com.—Rupert.

P. com.—Essex.

The next morning, an attempt of the Parliamentarians to cut off the Prince from retreating issued in a *skirmish* at

Chalgrove Field (Oxon), June 18.—*Royalists victorious.*

R. com.—Rupert.

P. com.—John Hampden, mortally wounded, dying within a week, his loss being a severe blow, and sore discouragement to his party.

In the beginning of the summer, there was discovered, a **Plot**,—in London, having for its

Object.—To seize the City, admit the Royal forces, and compel Parliament to accept terms, the main

Conspirators—being Edward Waller, the poet ; Tomkins, his brother-in-law ; and Chaloner, a friend of his. The two latter were hanged, but Waller escaped this fate, by confession, and the most abject entreaties, being, however, fined £10,000, and imprisoned.

The interest of the War now shifted to the West, whither Charles had sent Maurice, and the Earl of Hertford, with a body of cavalry ; these, having joined the Cornish force, *reduced* the county of

Devon, and commenced the reduction of

Somersetshire. Parliament entrusted a large command to Sir William Waller, to check these successes, and he, accordingly, hastened West, where he encountered the foe in the *battle of*

Lansdown, (near Bath), **July 5**.—*Royalists victorious*, with great loss on both sides.

R. com.—Prince Maurice.

P. com.—Sir William Waller,—and in the *battle of*

Roundaway Down, (near Devizes), **July 13**.—*Royalists decisively victorious*.

R. com.—Lord Wilmot.

P. com.—Sir William Waller, who, then, retreated on Bristol, with his *prestige* gone.

All the principal towns of the W., save Bristol and Gloucester, now surrendered to the Royalists, who, then, proceeded to the *siege of*

Bristol, **July 24-27**.—*Royalists victorious*, the suburbs being taken by storm, and the city capitulating.

R. com.—Rupert.

P. com.—Nathanael Fiennes,—who was tried by Court-martial, for not defending the place as well and long as he might have done, but was pardoned, by Essex, on resigning all his military offices.

Charles now joined his army, and *formed the siege of*

Gloucester, **Aug. 10-Sept. 5**.—*Parliament victorious*, the city being *relieved by Essex*.

The unbroken successes of the Royalists, in the W., (as well as in the N.), and the factions and discontents amongst the leaders of the popular party, now threatened the ruin of the Parliamentary cause, and loud were the

cries for peace when Gloucester was invested, cries to which the Parliament lent a favorable ear. But the staunch Puritan party so earnestly opposed the project, and so strenuously urged, and aided, the Houses, that it was determined to continue the contest with unflagging energy. As the fruit of this resolve, Essex was despatched, with 14,000 well-appointed troops, to raise the siege of Gloucester, in which he succeeded, Charles, on the approach of the Generalissimo, firing his tents, and retiring towards London.

Essex, owing to want of cavalry, forbore attempting to engage the King, but, also, hastened Londonwards, when, reaching Newbury, he was astonished to find that Charles had, by forced marches, already arrived thither. An action was almost inevitable, and the armies, accordingly, engaged in the *battle of*

Newbury, (Berks), Sept. 20.—*Parliament victorious*, though the fight was indecisive.

P. com.—**Essex.**

R. coms.—**Charles I. : Rupert.**

The field was hotly contested from daylight, the hitherto untried London train-bands displaying the valour and discipline of regular troops, and night, alone, put an end to the contest. The victors lost 500 men—the Royalists, 1500, and an unusually large number of officers, including Lords Carnarvon, Sunderland, and Falkland, “the glory of the . . . party.”

Next morning, Essex continued his march, and reached London, unmolested. The losses on both sides in this last battle, and the advancing season, soon sent the two armies into winter-quarters.

In the N., and E.,—

There appeared upon the scene, distinguishing themselves by their bravery and military skill, two remarkable men, to whom the issue of the struggle was, finally, due—Sir Thos. Fairfax, and Oliver Cromwell. The latter had, early in the contest, seen the necessity for filling the ranks of the Parliamentary army with “men of decent station, and grave character, fearing God, and zealous for public liberty,” instead of mere mercenaries, and, accordingly, set about this measure in his own regiment, whose ranks

soon consisted of the desiderated material, which he subjected to such a rigid and Puritanic discipline that his troops speedily acquired the nickname of "*Cromwell's Ironsides*," and became noted for stern, invincible, bravery, and fervid, ascetic, religiousness.

Early in the year, the Earl of Newcastle, who commanded the Royalist forces in the North, in opposition to Lord Fairfax, (father of Sir Thomas), succeeded in uniting Northumberland, Cumberland, Westmoreland, and most of Yorkshire, in a league for Charles, and established his authority in those counties. In this quarter, detachments of the opposing forces encountered, later on, in the *battle of*

Wakefield, May 21. — *Parliament* completely *victorious*.

P. com.—Sir Thomas Fairfax.

R. com.—General Geo. Goring.

This engagement was followed by the great *battle of Atherton Moor*, (Yrks.) **June 30.**—*Royalists* decisively *victorious*.

R. com.—Newcastle.

P. coms.—Lord Fairfax; Sir Thomas Fairfax.

The Parliamentarians were utterly routed.

Newcastle, then, with 15,000 men, *formed the unsuccessful siege of*

Hull,—of which Hotham had ceased to be governor, he and his son having been executed at London, for conspiring to deliver the place up to Newcastle.

In the E., were fought the *battle of*

Gainsborough, July 28.—*Parliament* *victorious*.

P. com.—Cromwell,—his *first victory*.

R. com.—General Cavendish, (slain),—and the *battle of*

Winceby, (near Horncastle, Lincoln), **Octr. 11.**—*Parliament* *victorious*.

P. coms.—Earl of Manchester; Cromwell.

R. com.—Sir Jno. Henderson.

During this year the *Parliament* succeeded in enlisting the aid of the *Scotch*, an army of 21,000 men, under the Earl of Leven, being ready by Decr., to march into England; while Ormond sent over from Ireland, five regiments for Charles' service in England.

1644, (a grand year for the Parliament) :—

In the N.—

The Irish contingent, landed at Mostyn, *reduced* the greater part of

Cheshire,—and proceeded to form the *siege* of

Nantwich,—to the relief of which town, Fairfax, the younger, hastened, attacking the beleaguers, unexpectedly, in the *battle* of

Nantwich, Jan. 25.—*Parliament victorious.*

P. com.—Sir Thomas Fairfax.

R. com.—Lord Byron.

A great part of the enemy (including General Monk), were captured, and large numbers of them deserted the Royal, for the popular, service.

Meanwhile, the **Scotch Army** had crossed the *Border*, *fruitlessly attacked*

Newcastle, and were, then, kept at bay, shut up in Sunderland, for five weeks, by Newcastle. The conqueror at Nantwich, however, after restoring the county of Cheshire, to the Parliamentary side, returning to Yorkshire, attacked a large body of Royalists, in the *battle* of

Salby, Ap. 11.—*Parliament completely victorious.*

P. com.—Sir Thos. Fairfax.

R. com.—Colonel Bellasis, whose forces were utterly routed.

Newcastle, to avoid being hemmed in between two armies, retreated, and Leven, and Fairfax, effected a junction, and formed the *siege* of

York,—whither Newcastle had retired. At the approach of summer, the investing force was materially strengthened by the advent of the Earl of Manchester, and Cromwell, his lieutenant, with their army, from the East, and the city was closely besieged, and reduced to extremity, when, sent, (from the N.W., where he had been employed), for that purpose, by Charles, (then in the W.), who feared that the fall of York would ensure his loss of the Northern Counties, Rupert advanced, with 20,000 men, to its relief. At his approach, the besiegers drew off, and prepared to give battle, on Marston Moor.

Rupert, reaching York by another route, and having the Ouse between himself and the enemy, effected a junc-

tion with Newcastle, and, then, contrary to the latter's entreaty, but in consonance with the King's orders, marched upon, and engaged the foe, in the *battle of*

Marston Moor, (Yorks.), July 2.—*Parliament victorious.*

P. coms.—Sir Thomas Fairfax : Earl of Leven : Cromwell, (to whom the victory was mainly owing).

R. coms.—Rupert : Newcastle : Goring.

In this deadly fight, one of the three great decisive battles of the war, (the other two being Naseby, and Worcester), Goring, commanding the left, furiously attacked the Parliamentary cavalry, threw them in confusion upon their infantry, and put the whole wing to rout,—while Newcastle, in the centre, resolutely maintained his ground against the Scots, and Leven, repulsed and disheartened thereby and by Goring's defeat, fled, believing the battle lost : Cromwell, however, with his Ironsides opposed to the Royalist right wing, commanded by that dashing *sabreur*, withstood all Rupert's fiery assaults, and, finally, drove his cavalry, pell-mell, from the field.

Returning to the field, the victorious Oliver found the equally successful Goring about to seize on the Parliamentary baggage and carriages, and renewed the fight, both sides re-engaging with exactly counterchanged fronts and positions. Again did the stern valor of the Roundheads prove irresistible : Goring was swept from the field, after a furious struggle, and complete and crushing victory proclaimed itself for the Parliament. The enemy's loss consisted of quite 3,000 slain, 1,500 prisoners, and all their artillery, munitions, and baggage ; while the victors had nearly 1,000 slain.

This engagement would have proved fatal to the King's cause, but for the disaster of Essex, (*related hereafter*), in the W.,—and, as it was, had most disastrous results, one, and not the least, of which was that Newcastle, either piqued at his counsel being slighted by Rupert, or despairing of the Royal cause, retired forthwith, to the Continent, to fight no more for Charles.

Rupert drew off hastily, into Lancashire.

York was again besieged by the Parliamentarians, and, in a few days, capitulated. Fairfax, then, making the city his head-quarters, established the Parliamentary authority,

and completely extinguishing, for ever, Charles's power, throughout the North.

In the S., W., and Centre,—the Royal cause was, on the whole, successful. The first engagement was the *battle of*

Cheryton Down, (near Alresford, Hants), **March 29.**—*Parliament victorious.*

P. com.—Sir Wm. Waller.

R. com.—Lord Hopton.

This was followed, and more than outweighed, by the *battle of*

Cropredy Bridge, (Oxon), **June 29.**—*Royalists victorious.*

R. coms.—Charles I. : Earl of Cleveland.

P. com.—Sir Wm. Waller, who was pursued, with great loss ; after which, his army, thoroughly disheartened, deserted wholesale, leaving him so utterly powerless that Charles was able to disregard him, and march westward against Essex, with the main body of the Parliamentary army, in the South. He had retreated into Cornwall, and, now, allowed himself to be *surrounded*, hopelessly, and *cooped up* in a corner, by the *Royalists*, at *Lostwithiel*. Himself, with a few of his officers, succeeded in escaping, by sea, to Plymouth,—and the cavalry, under Balfour, got clear off, during a fog ; but Skippon, with all the infantry, artillery, baggage, and munitions, was *compelled to surrender*,—this being *the severest blow the Parliament had received*.

They, however, speedily fitted out another force, which they entrusted to Manchester, who engaged the enemy in the *second battle of*

Newbury, Oct. 27. — *Parliamentarians victorious*,—but indecisively.

P. coms.—Earl of Manchester : Cromwell.

R. com.—Charles I.

The fight was long and stubborn, and ended in the King's retiring to Oxford,—the campaign thus closing.

1645:—

In Jan'y., another attempt was made at negotiation,

and commissioners met at Uxbridge, only to find that accommodation was impossible.

In April was passed the

Self-denying Ordinance.—In the Parliamentary party, the Independents, “who had, at first, taken shelter, and concealed themselves, under the wings of the Presbyterians,” had recently “evidently appeared a distinct party,” with “different views and pretensions,” its political principles being more pronounced and advanced, including, as regarded the civil strife then going on, the demolition of the Throne, a length to which the Presbyterians were not prepared to go. The natural result of this difference was animosity and dispute, in the House and the camp. The Presbyterians were in a majority in the former, but the Independents, who could boast as their leaders Cromwell, Sir Harry Vane, Oliver St. John, (Solicitor-General) and Nathaniel Fiennes, were superior in debating power, sagacity, and political address, and managed, thus, to carry their measures, amongst which the most important was the re-modelling of the army, the offspring of the subtle brain of Cromwell, who saw in it the instrument by which his party should obtain control of the army, and, consequently, of the Parliament, and, so, gain its cherished ends,—and by which, moulded to his purpose, and attached to him by strongest ties, he should be able to carry out his own profound schemes of ambition.

There had, for some time, been bickerings amongst the commanders belonging to the two sects, *Cromwell and his fellows* accusing Essex and the other leaders appointed by Parliament of incompetency and dilatoriness, and the murmurers, now, in pursuit of their designs, openly, *in the House*, gave utterance to their condemnation of the conduct of the late campaign, Cromwell particularly charging Manchester with having refused him permission to attack the Royal army, when in retreat, after the battle of Newbury, and, thus, (as he alleged), losing an excellent opportunity of ending the war.

Recriminatory debates went on for some time, but the Independent faction dared not openly propose the removal of Essex, Warwick, and the other leaders whom they desired to supersede, because of the popularity and esteem enjoyed by them, especially by the first-named. They,

therefore, determined to proceed in an indirect, but not the less sure, way. Accordingly, at Cromwell's instance, a committee was appointed to draw up the celebrated Ordinance, *excluding all Members of Parliament from holding any civil or military office conferred by either House.*

The measure passed the Commons after severe debate : while the Peers, whose order it more nearly concerned, rejected it once, but, then, passed it, under great pressure from the Lower Chamber.

The result of this was to place the army in the hands of the Independents, under the nominal command of Fairfax, but actually under that of Cromwell, who was allowed, as indispensable to the cause, to retain his commission, and was appointed Lieutenant, (commanding the cavalry), to the quasi-generalissimo.

Essex, (who received a pension of £10,000), Warwick, Manchester, Denbigh, Waller, Brereton, and others, resigned their commissions, retiring with the thanks of Parliament.

Having, thus, obtained the virtual control of the forces, Cromwell, under the name of Fairfax, introduced into the army the

New Model.—Out of the existing bodies, new regiments and companies were formed, and fresh officers were appointed, the commands being so manipulated as to place the national forces in the hands of those whom the Independents could trust. At the same time, the discipline of Oliver's Ironsides was extended throughout the forces, while the men were encouraged, by every possible means, to the austere, yet fervid piety, so dear to Cromwell, the officers, to this end, being, to the extrusion of chaplains, entrusted with the spiritual care of their men. "Never, surely, was a more singular army assembled! . . . The . . . soldiers, seized with the . . . spirit" of fanatic and stern devotion, "employed their vacant hours in prayer,—perusing the Holy Scriptures,"—singing psalms and hymns,—delivering and hearing exhortations from "brethren," and in conferences for mutual encouragement and setting forth of "experiences." "They sang psalms as they advanced to the charge,—they called on the name of the Lord while . . . slaying their enemies,"—"they endea-

voured to drown the sense of present danger in the prospect of that 'crown of glory' which was set before them." Long, compounded, Biblical epithets, (*e.g.*, *Zeal-for-the-Lord*; *Hew-Agag-in-Pieces-before-the-Lord*; *Pray-without-Ceasing*, were adopted in place of Christian names. Much of this was mere cant, and hypocrisy, and amongst these flaming professors were some of the most crafty rogues and abandoned libertines, but, on the whole, the men were profoundly sincere, and rigidly consistent in life. They were animated by the lofty idea that they were the soldiers of the Most High, and that He was with them and their great leader as He had been with Gideon, and other worthies who had "waxed valiant in fight, put to flight the armies of the aliens,"—that they were His chosen people, commissioned to execute His wrath, (as the Israelites were, with regard to the Canaanites), upon their ungodly and licentious foes. Thus animated, and burning, moreover, with a love of liberty, and attachment to their homes, these staunch and dauntless heroes proved irresistible in battle; and when, under the Commonwealth, they fought abroad, carried terror and rout wherever they appeared, and made the name of the English soldier a Continental dread.

Such were the forces with which the new campaign commenced. The Royalists, though the more numerous party, had little or no chance before such opponents; the unbridled debauchery and licence, aggravated by want of pay, rendered the "Cavaliers," generally, "more formidable to their friends than to their enemies."

Under these circumstances, opened the memorable campaign of 1645.

Success smiled upon the Royalists at the commencement. The Parliamentarians, *under Weldon, relieved*

Taunton,—but were, almost immediately, shut up, in the town, by Granville.

The King, himself, marched Northwards, from his winter quarters, and *raised the siege of*

Chester,—and, then, on his way back to Oxford, (whither he started on hearing of its being invested by Fairfax), laid siege to, and captured,

Leicester, garrisoned by the enemy.

Meanwhile,

Oxford, left exposed by Charles' absence, was *invested* by Fairfax, who, however, *abandoned it*, on hearing of the Monarch's successes, and advanced North, with a view to engage him.

The two armies approached to within six miles of each other, before either knew of the other's movements, but, when their proximity was ascertained, Rupert advocated an attack, and won Charles' consent thereto, the result being the *battle of*

Naseby, (near Market Harborough, Northampton).

June 14.—*Parliament decisively victorious.*

P. coms.—Sir Thomas Fairfax; Cromwell; General Ireton, (Cromwell's son-in-law).

R. coms.—Charles I.; Rupert; Sir Marmaduke Langdale.

The contending forces were pretty equal in numbers, and the field was vigorously and stubbornly contested. Rupert, charging with his habitual fury, routed and put to flight the Parliamentary right wing under Ireton, but, as usual, lost his advantage by imprudence, for, having pursued the fugitives a considerable distance, he wasted time in a useless attack on the enemy's artillery, which was efficiently guarded by infantry. In the centre, where the King commanded, the main body of the infantry had rather the advantage against Fairfax. But Cromwell turned the scales, just as he had done at Marston Moor: commanding the left, he, discomfiting Langdale's horse, sent three squadrons to prevent their rallying,—and, then, turned upon the Royalist infantry, now worn-out with severe fighting, and threw them into hopeless confusion. Rupert reappeared, at this juncture, with his victorious cavalry, but came too late, for, spite of the King's exhortation to them, "one charge more, and the day is recovered!" they saw the odds were too great, and refused to renew the fight, whereupon Charles left the field and the victory to the enemy.

The triumph of the Parliament was complete, and decisive of the Civil War, as far as this reign was concerned. The Royalists lost 800 killed and 5,000 prisoners, including 500 officers; all their artillery and munitions; and had their infantry almost dissipated,—while their opponents had but 1,000 missing. But the most serious inci-

dent of this disastrous field for the King was the loss of his *private cabinet*, which fell into the victor's hands, containing, as it did, *papers and copies of letters* (chiefly to the Queen) revealing the profoundest treachery and deceit on Charles' part, shewing, as they did, that he had intrigued with the Irish rebels, and endeavoured to obtain the aid of foreign princes against his people,—and that the concessions which he had offered had all been in bad faith. The effect of these discoveries was heightened by the treaty, just concluded, with the Irish rebels. A selection of the documents was published under the title, "*The King's Cabinet Opened*," causing no small sensation. Even the Royalists began to lose respect for him, and confidence in his cause.

After the battle, Charles, with the unbroken cavalry, retired into Wales, (whither, at the commencement of the campaign, he had sent the Prince of Wales, æt. 15, with the title of "General," and orders that he should, if pressed by the foe, escape to the Continent, and, so, preserve one branch, at least, of the Royal Family), and there remained for some time, vainly endeavouring to raise forces.

Rupert went West, and assumed the defence of Bristol, while

Taunton was invested, by Goring, who, however, raised the siege, at the approach of Fairfax, who followed him to, and drove him from, the open town of

Langport,—and, then, took, successively,

Bridgewater, (defended by Colonel Edmund Windham, Governor: the outer town was taken by storm, whereupon the garrison, 2,600 strong, capitulated, July 23); **Bath**; and **Shelborne**,—after which he formed the siege of

Bristol,—Parliament victorious.

P. com.—Fairfax.

R. com.—Rupert.

It had been expected that Rupert would make a splendid and protracted defence; instead of this, no sooner had the enemy entered the lines, by storm, than he capitulated, Sept. 11, after only a few days' siege.

Charles, who had built much on his nephew's holding this city, and was anxiously collecting means for its relief,

was overwhelmed with astonishment and vexation at the *fiasco*,—little less fatal to his cause than had been the terrible day at Naseby. In his anger, he cancelled all Rupert's commissions, and sent him a free pass to leave England.

From this point, the affairs of *the King* simply dropped to pieces. He *raised the siege of*

Hereford, which the Scots had formed, but this was the last ray of sunshine which he enjoyed. From Hereford he *advanced to attempt to raise the siege of*

Chester, the only post by which he could keep up communication with Ireland,—but his forces were encountered by the enemy in the *battle of*

Rowton Heath, (near Chester).—*Parliament victorious.*

P. coms.—Colonels Poynts, and Jones.

R. com.—Sir Marmaduke Langdale.

The Royal army was completely shattered, in this engagement, with a loss of 600 slain, and 1000 prisoners.

With the poor remnant of his forces, Charles escaped to Newark, and, thence, to Oxford, where he wintered.

Fairfax, however, continued in the field, and succeeded in reducing all the West, while Cromwell did the same in the Centre. The Prince of Wales, according to his father's orders, retired to the Continent, joining his mother at Paris. To these disasters, was added the destruction of the King's hopes in Scotland.

His cause having now become hopeless, the King made, during the winter, repeated overtures for peace, but Parliament rejected his proposals, their refusal becoming the more decided upon the discovery of the King's treaty with the Irish rebels. In

1646 :—

Fairfax, with a numerous and triumphant army, leaving his quarters, *marched upon Oxford*, with the intention of besieging the city. Charles, seeing resistance to be useless, and his own capture inevitable, *fled* from Oxford to Newark, and *gave himself up to the Scots*, whose camp was at that place, (May 5).

Oxford surrendered, (in consequence of Charles's orders, issued, by direction of the Scots, to it and all his other

garrisons), on excellent terms, **June 24**. Rupert and Maurice received passports, and left the kingdom for France, and the Duke of York was conveyed to London. The

CIVIL WAR was RENEWED 1648:—

Cause.—The *harsh* line of *procedure* of the *Parliament*, under the influence of the army and the Independents, *towards Charles*, which brought about a *reaction* in his favor.

The Royalists in England were, in this movement, supported by the Scotch, under the Duke of Hamilton.

(The incidents of this revival of hostilities are, frequently, styled, the "**Second Civil War**," (those from the commencement of the struggle down to Naseby being termed, the "**First Civil War**."). But there seems no need for such a distinction: there was, in reality, but *one* Civil War, which began in 1642, and ended, (as far as England was concerned), in 1651, with the Battle of Worcester).

Events:—In the W.—

Seventeen ships, lying in the Thames Mouth, *declared for Charles*, and, setting their admiral ashore, *sailed to Holland*, where the Prince of Wales took command of them. A fresh *squadron* was fitted out, and *under the Earl of Warwick*, sent out to oppose the deserted vessels.

Colonel Poyer, and other Presbyterian officers, raised a force of 8,000 Welshmen, and *seized Pembroke Castle*. The movement was deemed so serious that Cromwell himself was despatched to put it down. Entering the Principality, he *formed the siege of*

Pembroke.—*Parliament victorious*, the town and castle *capitulating*, after six weeks' siege, **July 11**.

P. com.—Cromwell.

R. com.—Colonel Poyer.

In the E.—

The Royalists occupied, and the Parliamentary forces *formed the siege of*,

Colchester.—*Parliament victorious*, the town *capitulating*, **Aug. 28**, after over two months' siege.

P. com.—Fairfax.

R. coms.—Earl of Norwich; Lord Capel.

Fairfax, most unjustifiably, caused two of the brave defenders, Sir George Lisle, and Sir Charles Lucas, to be shot, reserving Norwich, and Capel, for the judgment of Parliament. *This engagement terminated this portion of the struggle, in England.*

In the N.—

Sir Marmaduke Langdale, and Sir Philip Musgrave, who had levied considerable forces, were joined by the Scotch contingent, under Hamilton. Cromwell, after reducing Pembroke, hurried across country, and, with a force only half as numerous as theirs, engaged the Royalists in the battle of

Preston, Aug. 17.—Parliament victorious.

P. com.—Cromwell.

R. coms.—Duke of Hamilton : Sir Marmaduke Langdale.

The fight was desperate, lasting six hours. Cromwell pursued Hamilton to Uttoxeter, and compelled him to surrender, and, then, marched into Scotland, where he remained two months reducing the Royalist rising.

PARLIAMENTARY AND POLITICAL EVENTS.

First Parliament, June 18–Aug. 12, 1625,—assembled in London. Charles asked for large supplies, mainly for the war with Spain. Parliament voted only £140,000, and tonnage and poundage for a year (instead of for the King's life, as was customary)—being determined not to grant Charles all he demanded, until they should test his readiness to consent to the reforms they desired.

They adjourned to Oxford soon after meeting, on account of the plague. Here they discovered that Charles had consented to let eight English ships, which had been sent to aid the French king against Spain, be used by him against the Huguenots of Rochelle. Parliament being confirmed by this incident in their refusal of further supplies, until Charles should remedy their complaints, he summarily dissolved the Houses.

Second, Feb. 6–June 15, 1626,—summoned by Charles after the unsuccessful expedition to Cadiz, by which he had hoped to obtain such funds as would render him independent of Parliament.

In the Commons,—although Charles had managed to exclude some of the most independent members by making them sheriffs,—there was the same refusal to grant supplies, unless it was allowed them to impeach Buckingham as the author of the Spanish war, the cause of England's naval humiliation, and the fountain-head of all the abuses of power on the part of the Crown in the last and the present reigns.

Sirs Dudley Digges and John Eliot were committed to the Tower by Charles, for their bold utterances during the debate on this impeachment; the Commons refused to transact any business as long as the two members should be confined, and Charles was compelled to release them.

In the Lords,—Charles endeavoured, by various illegal means, to exclude from sitting in the House the Earl of Bristol, late ambassador to Spain, who knew and could prove Buckingham to be accountable for the rupture of the marriage treaty and the consequent war. The Lords, however, insisted on Bristol's attendance, and he clearly proved Buckingham's duplicity.

The King, seeing Parliament determined on Buckingham's ruin, dissolved it, in order to save him.

Charles now resorted to illegal measures to obtain money, the chief of which were demanding the payment of the supplies which the Commons had only expressed themselves ready to grant on Buckingham's impeachment, and a forced loan. Several gentlemen were sent to prison for refusing to pay their share of the loan;—five of these protested against their confinement, and the question of its legality was tried in the Court of King's Bench. The Attorney-General pleaded that they had been committed by the King's special authority,—that “the King could do no wrong,”—and that consequently there must be a satisfactory reason for the step Charles had taken. The judges decided in the King's favour.

Charles now assumed more arbitrary power, and endeavoured to put the country under martial law, and billet the troops in private houses.

Third, March 17, 1628,—March 10, 1629,—assembled by Charles, to procure supplies,—he having previously to its meeting released those imprisoned for refusing to subscribe to the loan.

In the First Session, very large subsidies were voted ; but, before legalising them by bill, the House investigated the King's illegal proceedings since their last sitting, and, as the result, drew up the PETITION OF RIGHT (the "*Second Great Charter of English Liberties*"). It pronounced illegal—

1. Obtaining supplies in any manner without the sanction of an Act of Parliament ; and prosecuting or imprisoning any one refusing to pay money illegally exacted.
2. Quartering soldiers and sailors on private individuals.
3. "Commissions for proceeding by martial law."

After considerable shuffling, Charles, seeing that there was no other way of obtaining the subsidies voted, and that Buckingham's impeachment was being again spoken of, gave his assent to the Bill in the customary words, "*Soit droit fait comme est désiré.*"

In the Second Session, the Commons, annoyed at tonnage and poundage having been levied since their last session, without their consent, and consequently in violation of the Petition of Right, and at the favour shown by Charles to the Arminian clergy, whose proclivities were decidedly Popish, and who supported the King in his struggles for absolute power, passed three RESOLUTIONS condemning as traitors to the country those who should—

1. Introduce Popery, Arminianism, or any other change in religion.
2. Advise the King to exact tonnage and poundage, without consent of Parliament.
3. Pay tonnage and poundage illegally levied.

Charles, enraged at this bold measure, dissolved Parliament, and imprisoned and fined Hollis, Strode, Seldon, Eliot, and other leaders of the popular party, whom he termed "*VIPERS.*"

Eliot died in the Tower.

From 1629 to 1640 Charles called no Parliament, and proceeded to greater stretches than ever of his prerogative. Supplies were obtained by illegally reviving monopolies—levying ship-money and excise dues,—and fining persons under the provisions of old laws, or for offences not recognised by the statute-book. The most unconstitutional measure, however, of which he was guilty, was *giving the force of law to his proclamations.*

During this period Charles's chief advisers were Lord Strafford (formerly Sir Thomas Wentworth) in civil affairs, and Laud, Archbishop of Canterbury, in church matters.

Fourth, or "Short," Parliament, Ap. 13–May 5, 1640,—assembled by Charles to obtain supplies for the projected war with Scotland.

The King asked for £840,000, and declared his readiness to forego ship-money, if that amount were granted. The Commons, before voting money, began an inquiry into abuses, and Charles dismissed them *after a session of three weeks*.

The King now assembled a council of peers at York, and laid before them the state of affairs between him and the Scots. They urged him to treat with the Scots, and meanwhile, to assemble another Parliament.

Fifth, or "Long," Parliament, met Nov. 3, 1640,—purged, 1648,—the remnant ejected by Cromwell, 1653,—recalled, and finally dissolved March 16, 1660.

The following were the *chief acts* of this celebrated assembly :—

1. Several victims of Star Chamber and other illegal prosecutions released.

2. Strafford and Laud impeached of High Treason.

Strafford, snuffing danger, had feared to present himself in this Parliament, but Charles, who could ill spare his counsels and support, induced him to alter his decision, promising, (so little did he realise his own danger), that he would so protect him that not a hair of his head should be injured.

The Commons, sitting with locked doors, unanimously voted a general impeachment of Strafford, and Pym was chosen to carry it up to the Lords. Just as he, accompanied by the majority of the House, presented himself in the Upper Chamber, the accused, all unsuspecting, entered, and was, immediately, ordered into custody, Nov. 11, a little over a week after Parliament had met.

Next month, after another debate, of less than half an hour, a like impeachment was voted against Laud, who was, thereupon, also committed to custody, Dec. 18.

Dreading a similar fate, Lord Keeper Finch, and Sir Thomas Windebank, the secretary, fled to the Continent.

3. The Triennial Bill passed,—providing that not more than three years' interval should elapse between one Parliament and the next.

4. A Bill passed that the present Parliament should last till it dissolved itself.

5. A Bill condemning Ship Money as illegal.

6. The Abolition of the Star Chamber and the High Commission Courts.

7. A "Remonstrance of the State of the Kingdom," drawn up and presented to Charles. It enumerated all the acts of tyranny and instances of misgovernment, from the commencement of the reign,—rehearsed the measures they had passed since the meeting of this Parliament,—detailed the obstacles that had been thrown in their way, and offered suggestions as to their removal, so that they might be successful in their "endeavours of restoring and establishing the ancient honour, greatness, and security of the crown and nation."

In consequence of this Remonstrance there arose in the Commons the two parties of ROYALISTS [*Malignants*], and PARLIAMENTARIANS. The Royalist party considered that Charles had conceded as much as could be expected; but the Parliamentarians had no confidence in him, and were bent on achieving complete constitutional freedom.

These two parties were called, also, respectively,

Cavaliers and Roundheads,—these terms originating thus :—

About the period of the impeachment of the bishops there were continual riots at Westminster, those prelates and members who adhered to the Crown meeting with insult and reproach from the mob supporting the popular party, who, moreover, were not chary of abuse and menace of the King. On the other hand, numbers of reduced officers, and young students of the Inns of Court, ranged themselves on the side of the sovereign, and frequent, and sometimes sanguinary fights occurred between the two factions, from whose antagonism sprang the nicknames, the latter being bestowed, by their foes, upon the rabble, on account of their short-cropped hair,—the former being given, in return, sarcastically.

8. Impeachment of the Archbishop of York and the other prelates. The bishops were extremely unpopular, owing

to their opposing the measures passed by the Commons. The Archbishop of York being insulted by the crowd in going to the Lords, he and the other bishops signed a protest declaring that they were kept from the House by force, and that all measures passed during their absence would be invalid. The Commons impeached them of high treason,—the Lords confirmed the impeachment,—and the bishops were sent to the Tower.

Early in 1642 Charles determined on a decided step, that should overawe the Commons, and restore his weakened authority. He sent the Attorney-General to demand the surrender of Pym, Hampden, Hollis, Hazelrig, Strode, and Lord Kimbolton, on a charge of high treason. They were not forthcoming, and on the next day Charles came to the House in person, with a large body of armed men, to seize the accused ; but they were designedly absent. Charles asked the Speaker where they were, and he replied that he could only see and speak as the House commanded him,—while, as the King was leaving the Hall, the members exclaimed "Privilege !" This violation of *Magna Charta* and of Parliamentary liberty was so clear a proof that the King was determined to pursue and widen his unconstitutional course, that the Commons were filled with the most serious alarm, and determined on more decided measures than ever. Charles himself saw that he had gone too far,—allowed the six members to return unmolested to the House,—retired to Hampton Court, and thence sent to ask the Commons to formulate their complaints and demands. The main demand was, that, as a guarantee of his good faith, he should give them the temporary control of *the militia*, the Tower, and the other royal fortresses. To this he gave a decided refusal, and the Civil War was the result.

9. A Bill passed for ordering the Militia,—Charles refusing his consent thereto.

10. A Bill depriving Bishops of their Votes in Parliament,—the last Act assented to by Charles before the Civil War began.

Early in 1644, *Charles assembled at Oxford a rival Parliament*, composed of the Royalist members of the House ; they sat only three months, and effected nothing.

After the battle of Naseby Charles fled to Wales, and

thence, on learning that the Scots were marching upon him, to Oxford. On Fairfax advancing towards the city, the King again fled to Newark, and there gave himself up to the Scots, who continued moving north with him, in spite of a demand from Parliament that he should be handed over to them.

The Parliament then sent proposals to the King,—to serve as the basis of negotiations for his restoration to power,—demanding the abolition of Episcopacy, the signature of Charles to the *Covenant*, the control of the army and navy for twenty years, and the exception of seventy of his party from the terms of a general amnesty. The Scots approved of these measures, and Charles, without giving a definite answer, asked that he might return to London to confer upon the proposed terms. The Scots, accordingly, offered to give him up to the Parliament, and to return home, on payment being made for the assistance they had rendered. £200,000 were paid down, and an equal amount promised them in two years' time,—upon which they delivered Charles into the care of the Parliamentary commissioners, who conveyed him to Holmby House, Northamptonshire.

The Presbyterian majority in the Commons, fearful of losing their ascendancy, now meditated great reductions in the army, which consisted mainly of Independents. The army took vigorous measures to prevent this step, and to maintain their ascendancy. A council of officers and *adjutators* (nicknamed "*agitators*") was appointed;—Charles was seized by Cornet Joyce, and removed to Hampton Court; the army marched to London, in spite of an order from Parliament forbidding their approach, entered the city, under Fairfax, and the measures that had been passed to their detriment were nullified.

The leading officers now offered Charles easier terms than the Parliament had proposed; but he proudly refused to treat with them. The Parliament, in concert with the officers, made another attempt at negotiations; but these were broken off, since it was found that he was in secret communication with the Scots.

Fearing the consequences that might follow the discovery of his treachery, the King fled to the Isle of Wight,

intending to escape to the Continent ; but he was kept in custody at Carisbrooke Castle, by Colonel Hammond.

Meanwhile, the republican party in the army, who were nicknamed "LEVELLERS" (from their aiming at national equality in Church and State), and who were in a large majority, clamoured loudly for Charles's trial.

The Parliament, however, determined on another effort, and sent fresh proposals to the King, the chief of which were that they should have the control of the army for twenty years, and that he should declare that their conduct during the Civil War had been right. Charles, being again engaged in negotiations with the Scots, refused to entertain them, and made an unsuccessful attempt at escape from Carisbrooke. Parliament then passed a resolution that any one attempting again to treat with him, without consent of both Houses, should be declared a traitor.

The Civil War now broke out afresh in Wales and Scotland, and Cromwell and the other Independent officers were obliged to leave their seats in the House and take the field.

The Presbyterians, finding themselves again in the majority, determined to secure their power by replacing Charles on the throne. They sent Commissioners to propose his agreement to the TREATY OF NEWPORT, the terms of which were the same as those sent to him when he was with the Scotch army. He consented to resign the control of the army, and to abolish Episcopacy for three years ; but demanded that all his followers should be included in the amnesty. Both Houses agreed to treat on this basis ; but the army were on the alert, and the day after the resolution passed,

Pride's Purge was administered to the Commons,—Colonel Pride going to the House, by Lord Grey's orders, with an armed force, and excluding the greater number of the Presbyterian members, Dec. 6, 1648.

The weeded chamber, which was nicknamed the

Rump Parliament, Dec. 6, 1648—Ap. 20, 1653,—had the King conveyed to Windsor, and determined on his trial for high treason.

Cromwell, who had been in command in Scotland, approved, on his return, of the steps the army had taken.

The Lords refusing to take any part against Charles, the Lower House appointed 150 commissioners to try the King. On January 20th, the Court opened in Westminster Hall, sixty-six of its members, under the presidency of John Bradshaw, a lawyer, being present. The charges, including all the grievances of the reign of which he had been the author, were read:—Charles entered a dignified protest against their right to try him, which availed him nothing:—lengthy evidence was given:—and, on the 27th, he was condemned to execution as a “tyrant, traitor, murderer, and public enemy” to the nation.

The sentence was carried out January 30th, in front of Whitehall. On the scaffold Charles protested that he was not responsible for the war, and that he died a *martyr* to liberty, for refusing to allow the sword to be omnipotent in the State. And even at this last moment, with “the ruling passion strong in death,” he declared that *the people had no right to any part in the government*. He urged his son’s claims to the throne,—declared to Bishop Juxon, who attended him on the scaffold, that he died a Protestant Churchman,—conversed in noble and elevated sentiments for a moment with his spiritual adviser,—gave Juxon the George he was wearing, with the mysterious and unexplained word “*Remember!*”—calmly placed his neck on the block,—gave the signal,—and at a single blow his head was severed by a masked executioner, whose identity has never been established, but who is asserted by some authorities to have been Cromwell himself.

The execution of Charles was utterly unconstitutional,—far more so than any of his own most illegal measures, for the following reasons amongst many:—

1. By *Magna Charta*, no freeman can be sentenced without the “lawful judgment of his peers.” Charles, as monarch, had no peers, and none in the land had the slightest right to sit in judgment on him.

2. No Court of Law can legally be established without consent of King, Lords, and Commons; but the Court that tried Charles was constituted by the Commons alone.

3. No capital sentence can legally be carried into effect unless the death-warrant be signed by the monarch;—and certainly Charles did not sign *his*.

The one right and open course would have been to depose

Charles. He had violated his Coronation Oath, and had thus, of his own will and act, dissolved the compact between himself and his people, who were consequently no longer bound to fulfil *their* part of the contract. But though great advances had been made towards clear views of political liberty, the power of the people to depose an unconstitutional sovereign does not seem to have been fully realised until James II.'s reign.

• ECCLESIASTICAL AND RELIGIOUS AFFAIRS.

• **Primates.**—Abbott ; Laud ; none from 1645 to 1660.

At Charles's accession, he made Laud, a leading Arminian, his counsellor in Church matters. The result was soon seen in Papist innovations. New forms and ceremonies were introduced,—tapers adorned the altars, and images of saints were placed in the churches,—and the Eucharist was declared to be a sacrifice. At the same time, the

Book of Sports was directed to be published in the churches.

The result of these measures was to drive numbers of the clergy into the Puritan ranks, and to originate another party called *Doctrinal Puritans*, who, while opposing these innovations, as contrary to the doctrines of the Reformation, did not, like the Puritans proper, object to forms.

Laud and the High Church clergy supported Charles in all his unconstitutional measures.

After the dissolution of the "*Short Parliament*," Convocation showed their sympathy with the King by voting him £120,000, and passing canons declaring the "divine right of kings."

A desire for a change of ecclesiastical system was the necessary consequence of these measures, and, chiefly owing to the near association with Scotland during the reign, the majority of voices seemed in favour of Presbyterianism.

The Westminster Assembly of Divines, 1643,—was called together by the Commons to reform the constitution and liturgy of the Established Church. It met in Henry VII.'s Chapel, Westminster, and consisted of 120 clergy (mostly with Presbyterian leanings), and thirty of the Lords and Commons. They drew up the **ASSEMBLY'S**

CONFESSION OF FAITH, the ASSEMBLY'S CATECHISM, and a DIRECTORY FOR PUBLIC WORSHIP to be used instead of the Book of Common Prayer, which received the sanction of Parliament.

The Assembly also declared that Presbyterianism was of Divine appointment, and passed resolutions giving the ecclesiastical courts the right to put down private assemblies for worship, and to exercise a censorship of the press. But the Independents, who were powerful in the Commons and omnipotent in the army, prevented these measures becoming law. A few Presbyteries were constituted; but the party soon lost their power.

Bishoprics were abolished by Parliament, 1646.

The High Commission Court,—was Laud's great engine of oppression in this reign.

It was established 1583, and consisted of forty-four members, twelve being bishops.

It tried offences against religion,—*e.g.*, heresy, non-attendance at church, publication of sedition, slander, and immorality.

It tried cases without juries, compelled the accused to reply on oath to all questions put to him, and punished by fines, imprisonment, and excommunication.

It is clear that a court thus irresponsibly constituted could be made a formidable instrument of tyranny, and this it gradually became, until Laud so abused it by the trial and severe punishment of persons for trivial and imaginary offences, that the Long Parliament *abolished it, 1641*.

Two instances of suits in this court, during this reign, will show the character of its proceedings:—

1. The Bishop of Lincoln was fined £10,000 *for slandering Laud*.

2. Canon Smart, for protesting against the High Church innovations, was fined £500, and thrown into prison, where he remained *eleven* years, till set free by the Long Parliament.

VARIOUS MATTERS.

Ship Money,—was a tax levied by Charles, under pretext of providing a fleet to guard the coast against pirates. Its real purpose was either to provide the King with money

for his own use, or to strengthen the navy for his service in case war should break out between himself and the Parliament. This tax was originated 1634, and was then exacted only from seaports. The measure was illegal, since it was not authorised by Parliament ; but at first no objection was made to it, as it seemed plausibly just that ports should contribute to their own safety. But, as it proved a profitable source of revenue, the tax was extended, in 1635, to *inland places*.

JOHN HAMPDEN, a Buckinghamshire yeoman, was rated at 20s., and refused to pay, declaring the demand to be illegal, and appealing against it to the Court of Exchequer. All the judges were present at the trial ; seven declared the tax lawful, and two, Hutton and Croke, illegal. Thus Hampden lost his cause ; but the opinions of the King's absolute power which the majority of the judges advanced during the trial had a great effect in alarming the people, and exciting them against Charles,—so that the trial had not a little influence in causing the Civil War.

The Court of Star Chamber,—was, in this reign, the great engine of political persecution.

It was, probably, established in 1448, and took its name, it is said, from its internal decorations. It consisted of the Chancellor, the Treasurer, the Privy Seal, one Bishop, one temporal Peer, and the Chief Judges.

It was established for the purpose of abolishing *main-tenance* ; but gradually extended its jurisdiction, until it embraced civil offences of all kinds ; more especially forgery, perjury, riot, libel, conspiracy, and contempt of proclamations. It could also revise and set aside verdicts recorded in other courts. It tried cases without juries, and its penalties were fines, the pillory, and other humiliating public exposures, flagellation, imprisonment, and mutilation.

It had become a formidable instrument in the hands of Elizabeth ; but its proceedings under Charles were so outrageous that the Long Parliament *abolished it, 1641*.

Two cases tried by this court in this reign, will give a fair notion of the style of its proceedings:—

1. PRYNNE, a lawyer, wrote in 1633, a work called "*Histrio-Mastix*," in opposition to the stage, and reflecting on the character of actresses, who had, in this reign, ap-

peared on the boards for the first time. As they had come from France under the Queen's patronage, and she herself had acted at a Court performance, it was pretended that the book was meant for a libel on her. Prynne was fined £5000, pilloried with loss of his ears, struck off the University and Inns of Court rolls, and sentenced to life imprisonment.

2. LEIGHTON, a Scotch minister, wrote a work called "Zion's Plea against the Prelacy," in which he denounced Episcopacy, and said some sharp things about the Queen, who was a zealous Papist. He was fined £10,000,—whipped and pilloried,—had his ears cut off, his nose slit, and his cheeks branded *S.S.* (=Sower of Sedition),—was expelled the Church,—and sentenced to life-imprisonment; but was released by the Long Parliament.

Tonnage and Poundage,—were Customs-dues first levied in Edward III.'s reign, and consisted of a certain charge on every *tun* of wine imported, and on every *pound* of merchandise either imported or exported.

INVENTIONS, DISCOVERIES, AND IMPROVEMENTS.

Hackney Coaches introduced into London, 1625.

The Postal System originated, 1635, between a few of the most important towns.

The Cotton Manufacture commenced, about 1638.

The Silk Manufacture greatly increased.

Coal used for smelting iron, and in very small quantities for domestic purposes. Nearly all the coal came from Newcastle.

COMMERCE AND COLONISATION.

The East India Company built **Madras**, and **Fort St George**, on purchased land, 1640.

SCOTCH AFFAIRS.

Acting by Laud's advice, Charles determined to abolish Presbyterianism, and to make the Scotch Church one in government and worship with that of England. A liturgy appointed to be used for the first time on Sunday, July 23,

1637 ("*Stony Sunday*"). In many churches the officiating ministers were pelted and roughly handled,—while at St. Giles's, Edinburgh, *Janet Geddes* threw a stool at the head of the Dean, when he commenced the liturgy.

A general alarm spread through the country, and at Edinburgh an assembly termed the "*Four Tables*,"—composed of representatives of the four orders of ministers, noblemen, gentry, and commoners,—met, and drew up

The Covenant, 1638,—pledging all who should sign it to oppose any innovation in Church government or ritual. It soon bore the names of nearly all the adults in the country. Charles then consented not to enforce the canons and liturgy until a Parliament and a General Assembly of the Church had been held,—hoping that he should gain their consent to his measures. But the General Assembly, in spite of an order from Charles to dissolve, sat until it had obliterated every trace of Episcopacy from the Church.

Charles now resorted to force, and, assembling a small army, advanced to Berwick, whither the Scots hastened to meet him. Finding his troops were not to be depended upon, the King hinted at an accommodation, and the result was—

The Pacification of Berwick, 1639,—providing that the Scots should return home, on condition that a Parliament and General Assembly should be held to debate the points at issue.

The Assembly carried the most decisive resolutions against Episcopacy.

The Parliament showed symptoms of attacking Charles's prerogative, and was abruptly dismissed.

Charles, guided by Laud and Strafford, determined on bringing the Scots to submission by force of arms.

To procure supplies for this purpose, he summoned his *fourth Parliament*; but it was dissolved, as usual, without his obtaining any, so that he was unable to equip adequate forces. The Scots, under General Leslie, crossed the border, and met the English, under Lord Conway, at

Newburn-on-Tyne (Northumberland), **1640**.—The English cavalry was routed with great loss.

The Scotch army advanced to the northern boundaries of Yorkshire. Charles, by the advice of a Council of Peers, which he had assembled at York, agreed to treat, and sent sixteen peers to meet eight Scotch commissioners at Ripon. The result was

The Treaty of Ripon, 1640,—provided that

1. The matters in debate should be discussed finally in London.

2. Meanwhile hostilities should cease.

3. The Scots should receive £5,600 per week, until the dispute should be settled.

The *Long Parliament* now met, and their sweeping measures made Charles anxious to obtain the favour of the Scots, since he foresaw that he might have to look to them for aid against the English. He accordingly induced them, by lavish promises, to disband their army. Soon after he visited Scotland, assembled a Parliament, and granted them almost everything they asked.

When the *Civil War* broke out the Scots held aloof. But, in the middle of 1643, when they saw the Royalists in the ascendant, their fears were aroused, for they knew if Charles and his party triumphed, one of the first uses of their victory would be to force upon them the Church they loathed. Accordingly, when Parliament sent commissioners to ask the co-operation of the Scots, they consented, on Parliament accepting

The Solemn League and Covenant, 1643,—by which

1. *The Scots* promised to send 21,000 troops to aid the Parliament.

2. *The English* promised to pay the Scotch army £31,000 per month.

3. It was mutually agreed that the Church of England should be remodelled according to Scripture, and the best reformed churches.

This adhesion of the Scots was fatal to the Royalist cause!

The Scotch Royalists, under the Earl of Montrose, gained several victories,—the two chief of which were

Tippermuir, 1644,—the Covenanters being commanded by Lord Elcho.

Kilsyth, 1645,—the Covenanters being commanded by General Baillie, and losing 5000 in slain alone.

But at

Philiphaugh, 1645,—Montrose was defeated by General Lesley, and the King's cause irretrievably ruined in Scotland.

After Naseby, Charles finally surrendered himself to the Scots at Newark: they handed him over to the Parliamentary commissioners, and returned to Scotland.

After a time, a feeling arose amongst a portion of the Scotch, that Charles was being hardly treated, and secret negotiations were set on foot with him, having for their aim his restoration on easier terms than Parliament offered. Parliament, discovering this, refused to treat with him any longer, and declared that any one negotiating with him would be guilty of high treason. This caused a Royalist reaction, in which the Scotch took part. They entered England, under the Duke of Hamilton, and, being joined by Langdale, drove Lambert before them; but he effected a junction with Cromwell, who, at

Preston, 1648,—utterly defeated the Royalists, after a stubborn fight,—took Hamilton a day or two after,—and then, marching to Scotland, reduced the country to submission, and remained in it for two months to insure quietude.

IRISH AFFAIRS.

The period was rendered terribly memorable in Ireland by the

GREAT REBELLION, 1641:—

Origin.—*Popular discontent at*

1. The *Colonization, under James I., of the lands of Ulster* and other parts, forfeited by rebellion, by English and Scotch adventurers, (mostly Protestants).

2. The *penal laws in force against Romanists*, (of whom the bulk of the population consisted).

3. The *mis-government of Strafford*, who had defrauded Royal grantees, (after paying for their grants),—declared the lands of Connaught forfeited, on pretence that they belonged to the Crown,—allowed no one to leave the Island without his licence,—established mighty monopolies for his own advantage,—imposed arbitrary taxes, and levied them by military force,—imposed the *Articles* on the

Irish Church,—and set up the authority of the Executive over the Law Courts.

Leaders.—Roger More, (an Irishman celebrated for bravery and ability); Sir Phelim O'Neil, (the representative of the Tyrone family); and Lord Maguire.

Object.—To massacre, and *expel*, the *English*,—and establish an independent *Romish State*, under the protectorship of Spain.

Strafford had raised the army in Ireland from 3,000 to 12,000 men, (with the secret purpose of employing them for Charles's benefit in England), and, thereby, had been able to keep the people in subjection. But Parliament had insisted on reducing the force to its original dimensions, the result of which rash step was to greatly weaken the English grasp on the country, and to turn loose on it a large body of men, mostly Papists, familiar with the use of arms.

The old Irish, seeing their opportunity, and encouraged by the successful efforts of English and of Scots to obtain redress of grievances, took advantage of the state of things in their own country and the distracted condition of England to raise the standard of revolt.

The approach of winter having been fixed upon for the commencement of the revolt, (so that the difficulty of transporting troops might be augmented), the insurgents began by a *surprise attack* on

Dublin Castle, Oct. 23, 1641,—which *failed*, owing to betrayal of the plan.

Meanwhile, O'Neil and his confederates set up the standard of *rebellion in Ulster*, and, immediately, were joined wholesale by their fellow-countrymen.

The insurgents confined themselves, at first, to seizing the estates, houses, cattle, and other property, of the settlers, in this province. When, however, they had stripped their victims thus, they, under the direction of their leaders and the priests, embarked upon one of the most horrible massacres in history, immense numbers of the wretched "heretics," man, woman, and child, being, variously, burned, (numbers in the ruins of their own houses), buried alive, and drowned, while others were stripped of their clothes,

and turned naked out of doors, amidst unusually rigorous cold and severe tempest.

The English of Ulster being totally annihilated, the *Rebellion rapidly spread* through the other divisions. The bloodshed therein was comparatively light, but the barbarities exercised rivalled those in the North.

The old English settlers, "of the Pale," (who were Romanists), seem, at first, not to have been in the secret, for they censured the rebels, professed abhorrence of their atrocities, and induced the magistrates to give them arms for the avowed purpose of supporting the Government. Soon, however, their religious overcame their political sympathies and convictions,—they joined the insurgents, taking Lord Gormanstone as leader, and, speedily, became worthy rivals in brutality of the old Irish.

The *total* of those who *perished* in all the provinces is estimated at from 50,000 to 200,000, the former being the number given by Clarendon, who would not over-do his calculation.

Only the holding out of Dublin Castle preserved the English name in the Island.

Regarding the charge that *the King* instigated, or, at least, connived at, the Rebellion, it seems pretty clear, from documentary evidence, that he was aware of the existence, long before the outbreak, of a revolutionary attempt being in contemplation,—and that he "*wished to turn this feeling to his own purposes, by causing an armed demonstration in Ireland, against the English Parliament.*"

It is strongly significant that *he*, on hearing of the rising, wrote to his Secretary: "*I hope this ill-news of Ireland will hinder some of these follies in England.*"

Large bodies of *troops*, English and Scotch, were *sent over* from time to time, *to put down the rising*, but with no result, the Romanists remaining in arms, and even forming a

Confederation, 1642,—to give unity to their acts. At the same time they professed the utmost loyalty to Charles.

By the exertions of the Marquis of Ormond, Lord-Lieutenant, and Commander-in-Chief of the forces in the Island, the Irish Council and magistrates were gradually enlisted on the side of the King, so that when the

English Parliament sent Commissioners over to conduct the affairs of the Kingdom, they were excluded from the Council.

In 1643, there being about 50,000 troops under his orders, *Ormond, acting on private instructions from Charles, agreed to an*

Armistice with the Rebels, Sept. 13,—whereby he was enabled to send over to his master's aid several Anglo-Irish regiments.

In 1645, "*the State of Ireland*" formed Article III. of those *propounded* at the fruitless negotiations at *Uxbridge*.

Later on, in the same year, occurred the battle of Naseby, and the consequent capture of the King's private papers, with their fatal evidence against Charles.

In Ireland, the same year, a secret Treaty with the Rebels was concluded.—Charles, now in extremities, being anxious to have over to his assistance all the troops remaining in the Island, instructed Ormond to promise the insurgents the repeal of all penal laws against Papists,—and, at the same time, as they might demand further concessions which could not be made openly, he gave a *private commission to the Earl of Glamorgan*, to levy men, and coin money, and employ the Crown revenues for their support,—and promised to ratify any treaty that nobleman might make, even if contrary to Law. But, to enable him, if necessary, to disclaim it, (which he, presently, actually did), the King caused the document to be drawn out informally.

In consonance with his instructions, Glamorgan concluded a

Secret Treaty of Peace with the Rebels,—amongst the stipulations being an understanding that they should retain all the churches they had held since the commencement of the War, on condition of assisting Charles with 10,000 men!

A copy of this precious document fell into the hands of the English forces, being *taken* with the baggage of the titular Archbishop of Tuam, who was killed in a *sortie* of the *garrison of Sligo*.

It was immediately published everywhere in Ireland, and copies sent to England.

Not only did Charles repudiate the Treaty, but, to keep up appearances, Glamorgan was actually thrown into prison, though soon released.

Upon his surrender to the Scots, the King sent orders to Ormond to submit (if he could not defend himself), to the Parliament, rather than to the Papists, which he, being in dire extremity, was nothing loath to do. Accordingly, he *delivered up*

Dublin, Drogheda, Dundalk, and other garrisons, to Colonel Jones, English commander, and himself quitting the Island for England, to eventually join Charles, in France, 1647.

Meanwhile, the Papists, dreading the Parliament, and disgusted with the indiscretion and insolence of Rinuccini, the Nuncio, saw that their only safe resource lay in supporting Charles's cause. Earl Clanricarde formed a secret

Combination amongst the Romanists,—drove the Nuncio from the Island,—and invited Ormond to return, and reassume the Government.

The latter consented, and came back, 1648,—and, immediately *concluded a*

Treaty with the Papists:—

Articles:—

1. The King to
 - (1). Grant full freedom of worship.
 - (2). Redress all grievances of religion and trade.
 - (3.) Establish the independence of the Irish Government.
2. The Irish to support an army of 17,500.

The army was raised,—and the Parliament, (occupied at home with the anxieties of the final struggle with the King's party), totally neglecting their interests in Ireland, Ormond readily *reduced*

Dundalk, Drogheda, and other garrisons, and *threatened Jones in*

Dublin,—which, with Londonderry, was the only stronghold left the Parliamentarians in the Island. At the moment of Charles's execution, it seemed very probable that Ireland would be lost to England.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS.

France.	Germany.	Spain.
LOUIS XIII.	FERDINAND II.	PHILIP IV.
LOUIS XIV.	FERDINAND III.	
Popes.		
URBAN VIII.	INNOCENT X.	

THE COMMONWEALTH.

Dates.—Jan. 30, 1649–1660, May 29.

The history of the Commonwealth consists of *three periods* :—

1. From Charles I.'s Execution to the appointment of Cromwell as Lord Protector, 1649–1653.

2. Oliver Cromwell's Protectorate, 1653–1658.

3. From Cromwell's death to the Restoration, 1658–1660.

[It is not, however, desirable to follow this division in the ensuing pages : it will be easy for the student who masters them to narrate separately, if required, the events, (general or special), of either of the three epochs].

During the period termed the "*Commonwealth*" Charles II. was, *de jure*, King, his regnal years being, according to the Judges, dateable from Jan. 30, 1649.

WARS.

1. THE CIVIL WAR, 1642–1651.

1. In England.—*Details* have been given under (and must be here narrated from), "*Scotch Affairs*," because it was mainly confined to, or connected with, Scotland.

2. In Scotland,—see "*Scotch Affairs*."

3. In Ireland,—see "*Irish Affairs*."

2. WITH THE DUTCH. 1652–1654.

Cause,—the rejection, by the Dutch Republic, of a proposal of alliance with England. The Dutch were, at this time, almost omnipotent at sea, and thought themselves in a position to treat with contemptuous indifference the overtures of the Commonwealth. Her envoys were insulted and ill-treated, and Royalist refugees were encouraged to settle in Holland.

In retaliation, England passed the NAVIGATION ACT, which dealt a death-blow to Dutch Commerce, and declared war, July 9, 1652.

Events :—

1652 :—

Previous to the declaration of War,

Hostilities commenced, early in May, by Commodore Young, who fired on a Dutch vessel, for not saluting the English flag. Soon after, occurred a battle

Off Dover, May 19.—English victorious.

E. coms.—Robert Blake; Captain Bourne.

D. com.—Van Tromp.

Tromp had 42 sail, Blake only 15, which were, however, reinforced, after the fight had begun, by 8 more, under Bourne. In spite of his numerical inferiority, Blake maintained the battle for 5 hours, sinking one, and taking another, of the ships of the enemy, who, then, night coming on, made off to the Dutch coast.

After the declaration of War,

Blake, sailing to the N. of Scotland, *drove away the Dutch herring "busses."* Returning thence, he was met by Van Tromp. A storm prevented an engagement, and Tromp returned to Holland, where he met with such unmerited censure, that he resigned, being succeeded by the equally brave and more skilful De Ruyter, who, with 50 ships, convoying 30 merchantmen through the Channel, was encountered by an English squadron, only 40 strong, in battle

Off Plymouth, Aug. 16.—Indecisive.

E. com.—Sir Geo. Ayscue.

D. com.—De Ruyter.

Night parted the combatants, and next day the Dutchman sheered off, with his convoy, the English being too cut up to follow.

The gallant Hollander, reinforced by a squadron under De Witt, speedily returned, and encountered a nearly equal English force in battle

In the Downs, Sept. 28.—English victorious.

E. coms.—Blake; Penn; Bourne.

D. coms.—De Ruyter; Cornelius De Witt.

The enemy's rear-admiral was boarded and taken, two others were sunk, and one blown up. Evening closed the conflict, and, next morning, the Dutch made all sail home, pursued by the English.

Van Tromp was now restored to the command, and, under his vigorous and determined direction, immense preparations were made for carrying the war to a successful issue. In two months, he was enabled to set sail from Holland with nearly 90 well-manned ships. Blake, on the other hand, owing to disgraceful naval maladministration, could muster but 37 sail, of which nearly all were unsound, and all badly-furnished in every way, while many of the captains were mutinous. Yet he did not hesitate to meet the Dutchman in *battle near*

Goodwin Sands, Novr. 28.—Dutch victorious.

D. coms.—Van Tromp; De Ruyter.

E. com.—Blake.

After 5 hours' gallant resistance, Blake was compelled to retreat, with great loss, and terribly shattered, to the Thames.

Tromp now sailed up and down Channel, unmolested, with a besom at his mast-head to indicate that he had swept the English from the sea.

Meanwhile, the indomitable Blake was vigorously reforming abuses, and refitting the fleet, no less than 80 ships being, by his exertions, at sea early in

1653:—

This fleet, lying in the Channel, was not long in finding the enemy, and giving *battle*

Off Portland, Feb. 18.—English victorious.

E. coms.—Blake; General Monk; Dean.

D. „ —Van Tromp; De Ruyter.

Blake was lying off Portland Island when he descried Tromp, with 76 ships, convoying 300 merchantmen up Channel, and, at once, attacked, the result being a *running fight* of three days, lasting till Feb. 20.

This was the fiercest engagement that had taken place during the War, Tromp fighting with magnificent pluck and tenacity, and, finally, making a skilful retreat, with the loss, however, of 11 of his own ships, 30 of the convoy, 2000 slain, and 1500 prisoners; the English had only one

vessel sunk, but their whole fleet was greatly shattered, while their slain totalled almost as high as those of the Dutch.

From this point onwards, the war was conducted with "vigor . . unanimity," and success. The next affair of importance was a great *battle*

Off the North Foreland, June 3, and 4.—*English victorious.*

E. coms.—Monk; Dean, (killed, by a chain-shot); Blake (came up the second-day, and decided the fight).

D. com.—Van Tromp.

The enemy lost 19 ships, and 1,300 prisoners: the English suffered very little.

Van Tromp hastened, with his shattered fleet, to the Texel, and was there *blockaded*, by Monk, Blake remaining on shore ill. In a few weeks, the Dutchman had refitted, and made an attempt to break through the English line, thus bringing on a *battle*

Off the Texel, July 29-31.—*English victorious.*

E. coms.—Monk; Penn.

D. com.—Van Tromp; (killed, by a musket-ball through the heart, while with furious desperation, urging on his men.)

The two sides being equal in force, (each having 100 sail), skill, and bravery, the fight was obstinate and protracted, the result being in suspense until Van Tromp received his death-wound: De Ruyter then sheered off towards the Texel, with a loss of 30 ships, sunk or burned, and, (including prisoners), 6,000 men: the English had two vessels destroyed, and 1300 men slain or wounded.

This victory decided the War, the Dutch, overwhelmed with their disasters and losses, (these including 1200 sail, and amounting, in money, to more than their 20 years' contest with Spain had cost them), eagerly sought to come to terms, and, in consequence, negotiations were opened, and issued in the signing of the offensive and defensive

Treaty of Westminster, April 5, 1654.

Main Articles:—

1. The United Provinces to

(1.) Recognise the supremacy of the flag of the British Commonwealth, in the narrow seas.

(2.) Restore the Island of Poleron, and pay the East India Company £170,000 compensation for damages.

(3.) Pay £3,615 to sufferers, during the War, at Amboyna, and compensate the Baltic merchants, also.

2. Neither of the contracting parties to shelter or aid the enemies of the other.

3. WITH SPAIN, 1655-1660.

Origin.—Cromwell's desire to extend the territory and power of England at the expense of Spain, together with, perhaps, strong religious antipathy on his part to the Romish faith, especially that bigoted form of it which obtained in Spain.

Events :—

In 1655 :—

*Before War was declared,
Cromwell required of Spain*

1. A free trade to the W. Indies.

2. The preëmption of Spanish wool for English merchants.

3. A guarantee that English traders should not be molested by the Inquisition.

These demands were, of course, refused, whereupon, on pretence of depredations on the English commerce, a squadron was despatched to the W. Indies, for the purpose of taking

St. Domingo, which was *attacked, unsuccessfully*, with great loss and disgrace, *by* the commanders, **Admiral Penn**, and **Venables**, (under whom there were 4,000 troops on board). That they might not return without accomplishing anything, the two, then, proceeded to

Jamaica, which important island *surrendered* at discretion, **May, 1655**.—This valuable conquest did not, however, prevent the Protector from sending both the commanders, on their return, in disgrace, to the Tower, for their failure at Hispaniola.

Upon news of this expedition reaching Europe,

Spain declared War,—and proceeded to seize all English ships and merchandize within grasp. Cromwell then concluded an

Alliance with France against Spain, Octr., 1656 :—

Blake, with Montague, made vigorous preparations for hostilities, and proceeding to Spain, lay off Cadiz, hoping to intercept the treasure ships, until want of water compelled them to sheer off towards Portugal, leaving, however, a squadron of 7 ships, on the coast, under

Captain Stayner, who, Sept. 9, took two galleons of the fleet from Lima, containing treasure to the value of nearly two millions. In

1657:—

The Spanish treasure-fleet, 16 strong, was pursued, by the English admiral-in-chief, to the Canaries. There it sheltered, and was brought to action, in the bay of

Santa Cruz, (Teneriffe), Ap. 20.—*English victorious.*

E. coms.—Blake; Captain Stayner.

The Spanish galleons were, with a large number of other vessels, moored under shelter of a strong castle and seven forts. With consummate daring, Blake, the wind favoring, sailed right into the crescent-shaped harbour, and, at once, commenced a fierce attack upon the enemy's ships, all of which, at the end of four hours, were on fire, the issue being their total destruction. Marvellously, just as this result was achieved, the wind served to bring the English fleet out of its dangerous position, which Blake successfully accomplished, the whole affair being one of the boldest and most dashing exploits in the annals of our navy. In

1657:—

A second Alliance with France was made, by Cromwell, on condition that Mardyke and Dunkirk should be given him as soon as they should be taken. In

1658:—

The Protector sent an army, 6000 strong, under General Lockhart, into Flanders, to join the French, under Marshal Turenne. The Allies, then, formed the siege of

Dunkirk:—

Allies' coms.—Turenne; Lockhart.

Sp. com.—Marquis of Leyden.

The enemy's marching to relieve the place brought on the battle of the

Dunes, June 4.—*Allies victorious.*

Allies' coms.—Turenne; General Lockhart.

Sp. coms.—Don Juan; Prince of Condé; Duke of York, (Jas. II).

The defeat was total, and was owing mainly to the valor of Lockhart's "immortal six thousand," most of whose officers fell, in consequence of their heroic daring.

Dunkirk surrendered June 17,—and was, according to agreement, given up to the English, its possession being regarded by Cromwell as a means of obtaining (with French aid), the partition of the Low Countries.

Ypres, Gravelines, and Oudenarde, now *fell*, successively, *into the hands of the Allies*.

The Restoration put an end to this War, as far as England was concerned.

4. MINOR QUARRELS WITH

1. Portugal, 1653,

Origin.—The Portuguese granting shelter to an English fleet which, soon after the execution of Charles I., revolted from the Parliament, and accepted Rupert for commander.

Blake pursued the fleet to the Tagus, wherein it had taken shelter, and, having demanded from the King, and been refused, permission to attack it, treated Portugal as an enemy's country, and *inflicted such damage on its shipping* that the King was only too glad to negotiate a

Treaty,—agreeing to

1. Repair all injuries done to England.
2. Pay the expenses of the hostilities Blake had engaged in.

2. Tuscany, 1655.

Origin.—The Duke's having allowed some English ships, seized by Rupert, to be sold at Leghorn.

Blake, appearing before the latter place, with the fleet he afterwards took to Algiers, &c., *compelled the Duke to pay £60,000 reparation* to the owners of the sold vessels.

4. Algiers, Tunis, and Tripoli, 1655.

Origin.—The *piratical attacks* of the Deys of these states upon the English shipping.

Blake, with a squadron of 30 ships, fitted out at the same time that Penn's was equipped for the W. Indies, sailed to the Mediterranean. Having determined to put

an end to the exploits of the Deys, who were very scourges to that Sea, he *sailed first to*

Algiers, *whose ruler wisely submitted*, giving satisfaction for the past, and pledges for the future.—Thence he proceeded to

Tunis,—whose Dey insolently braved him, and, in consequence, *had his castles*, (Porto Farino, and Goletta), *destroyed*, and his *ships burned*, to the great awe and admiration of that part of the world. Lastly,

Tripoli, his fame having preceded him, from Tunis, *made terms* with the English admiral.

Cromwell interfered on behalf of the

Vandois, the Protestants of the valleys of Savoy, (1655), who were being cruelly persecuted by the Duke of Savoy. Under his influence, the French Government brought such pressure to bear that *toleration*, and restoration of their ancient privileges, were *granted* to the sufferers.

Cromwell's foreign policy, (though more meddlesome and high-handed than would suit our day), was "magnanimous, enterprising, and ultimately successful, and, by his firmness and prudence, he made" the English "Government respected" more than it had ever been before, excepting under Elizabeth. "It was his boast," (and a boast which proved true), "that he would render the name of an Englishman as much feared and revered as ever was that of a Roman."

PLOTS AND REBELLIONS.

1. Conspiracy to assassinate Cromwell, 1654,—encouraged by Charles, and supported by Royalists and Republicans.

Two of the leaders, Gerard and Vowell, were executed. To guard against such plots for the future, Cromwell divided the country into ten parts, and placed over each an officer, who was to be on the watch for all risings, and to levy on well-to-do Royalists a tax of a tithe of their incomes. This scheme was termed DECIMATION.

2. Conspiracy to assassinate Cromwell, 1657,—originated by Colonel Sexby, a refugee abroad, who induced

Miles Syndercombe to undertake the enterprise. The latter was taken, and convicted of high treason, but died the day before that appointed for his execution.

3. A Royalist Conspiracy, 1658.—An invasion from Flanders was to be supported by a general rising in London.

Cromwell knew of this, as he seems to have done of all other plots under his rule, from the first. Dr. Hewit, a church clergyman, and Sir Henry Slingsby were executed.

4. A Royalist Insurrection, 1659,—originating in the unsettled state of things after Richard Cromwell's abdication. The majority of the Royalists engaged in it ; but, seeing that decided steps were being taken by Parliament, they all postponed their design excepting Sir Geo. Booth, who was joined by Lords Herbert and Derby, and took Chester. He was, however, completely defeated at Nantwich by Lambert.

PARLIAMENTARY, &c., AFFAIRS.

1. Before Cromwell's appointment as Protector :—

Before the execution of Charles I., there had been discussions in Parliament as to the future government of the country. Some had favored the idea of passing by the King's two elder sons, Charles and James, whose principles were fixed, and conferring the Crown upon the Duke of Gloucester, or the Princess Elizabeth ; the majority, however, desired a republic, and it was, accordingly, this form which the Commons proceeded to establish, after the execution.

As the first step thereto, there was, immediately, issued a **Proclamation**,—declaring it treason to give anyone the title of "King." The Lower Chamber then passed a

Vote abolishing the House of Lords, as "useless and dangerous," Feb. 6, 1649,—whereupon, the few Peers who had continued to sit broke up. The Commons then sanctioned a

Vote abolishing Monarchy, as "unnecessary, burdensome, and dangerous," Feb. 7.

The supreme authority now rested in the "*Rump*," who proceeded to appoint, as the Executive, a

Council of State (Feb. 14), consisting of 41 individuals, including Lords Denbigh, Pembroke, Mulgrave, Salisbury, and Grey ; Cromwell, Fairfax, Skippon, Ludlow, and Hutchinson ; Bradshaw, (President), Whitelock, St. John, Vane, Hasilrigge, and John Milton, (Foreign Secretary).

The functions of this Council, (which was appointed for a year only, at the end of which the Commons were, as they promised, to restore the power to the people, from whom they acknowledged to have received it), were the Home Government ; the direction of the Army and Navy ; the supervision of Trade ; and the management of Foreign Affairs.

All public business forms were changed from the King's name to that of the "Keepers of the liberties of England," and a new Great Seal was engraved, bearing the effigy of their House, with the legend, "ON THE FIRST YEAR OF FREEDOM, BY GOD'S BLESSING, RESTORED, 1648."

A few of the excluded members of the Commons were readmitted, and some writs were issued for new elections in places where the House had reason to expect majorities—these two measures being an assumption of legality.

Want of unity soon made itself apparent in the Council.—Parliament passed a

Vote requiring every Councillor to swear that he approved of all that had been done, at, and after, Charles' execution.—This Cromwell and others cheerfully did : the majority, however, including Fairfax and Vane, refused, whereupon a compromise was come to, the dissentients being allowed to make, instead of the desired oath, a general promise of adherence to the Parliament, and to Government by republic, without King or Peers.

The great support of the Rump was the Army, 50,000 strong, essentially Independent, devoted to, and under the control of, Cromwell, who, from the first, there seems no doubt, foresaw, and was quietly paving the way for, his own absolute rule.

The proceedings of the House were displeasing to the great body of the nation, the Royalists, of course, burning with rage against their ignoble, but triumphant, opponents,—the Presbyterians chafing at the domination of the Independents,—and the "Levellers," and other factions

in the army, suspecting Cromwell and his party of self-seeking, complaining of the tyranny of the Council, and burning to put their tenets into practice,—and the people generally groaning under heavy taxation. To overawe malcontents, Parliament proceeded to the

Trial of the Duke of Hamilton, who had commanded the Scots at Preston,—the Earl of **Holland**, who had endeavoured to raise London against the Parliament, at about the same time,—and the Earl of **Norwich**, (Goring), **Lord Capel**, and Sir Jno. **Owen**, who had surrendered at Colchester. They were arraigned before a High Court of Justice, and found “Guilty” of high treason. Goring and Owen were spared, *Hamilton, Holland, and Capel, executed Mar. 9.*

To coërcé the mutinous “Levellers,” a number of their body were sent to the Tower, and one of their leaders, an able, bold, and determined man, named

John Lilburne, was tried, on a new Statute of Treason, *but, after a long trial, acquitted, Octr. 28.*

To meet the expenses of government, a

Revenue was raised from monthly assessments,—an excise on beer, wine, and spirits,—tonnage and poundage; and fines and compositions, drawn from Royalists and Romanists.

During the hostilities in which Cromwell, and other leaders, were engaged, in the next year or two, a political revolution was being prepared. While they were absent in their commands, a mutual jealousy and mistrust sprang up between the chiefs and the Parliament. On the cessation of war, the latter, to curb the authority of Cromwell, (especially), and his confederates, and bring them under control, passed a

Vote reducing the Army one-fourth,—determining, at the same time, to still further diminish it, in six months’ time.

Cromwell, now, since the battle of Worcester, by general recognition, the first man in the Kingdom, animated by both a sincere desire to promote the country’s liberties, and a purpose to carry out his own schemes of ambition, determined to thwart the Commons. Accordingly, he com-

menced, from about Sept., 1652, to hold conferences *with the leading officers, and with certain members* who were attached to him, with a view of bringing about a dissolution of the "Rump," the calling of a new Parliament, and the formation of an executive government, (at the head of which Cromwell was to be), in the meantime. After several months' deliberation, there was *presented*, on their behalf, to the House, early in 1653, a

Remonstrance,—in which—after detailing such grievances as the arrears of pay due to the army, and the disregard shewn by the civil officers for aught but emolument and patronage—they asked Parliament to consider how many years they had been sitting, and whether it was not time for them to summon a new House, which should fairly represent the nation, and establish that popular liberty and equal government which they had so long promised the country.

The Rump received this document with disfavor, and determined not to dissolve, but to increase their number, by recalling, under the new title of "Neuters," the Presbyterians. This prospect was, naturally, most repugnant to Cromwell and his party, since it was easy to foresee that, readmitted, this intolerant body would form a majority which would be used for the forcible establishment of their system. Accordingly, he and his supporters firmly opposed the design, and, finally, obtained from the House, at a

Conference, Ap. 19,—a pledge that they would not proceed with their scheme until they had further communicated with him. The next day, however, *Cromwell*, to his astonishment and rage, learned that they were actually passing a Bill embodying their project, and, with his customary rapid decision, *took instant steps* for the

Dissolution of the Rump, Ap. 20, 1653.—Taking with him 300 musketeers, he hastened to the House, and, posting his men at the door, in the lobby, and on the stairs, entered, in the midst of the debate. Having announced to St. John that the purpose of his coming was to do what vexed him to the soul, and what he had earnestly, but in vain, with tears, sought the Lord not to lay upon him, he sat down, and, for awhile, listened to the discussion. Then, beckoning to him, he told Harrison

that he considered Parliament ripe for dissolution. "Sir"! said the former, "the work is very great and dangerous; I desire you seriously to consider before you engage in it." "You say well," responded he, and again remained quiet for about a quarter of an hour. Suddenly starting up, he vehemently reproached the members with selfishness, venality, oppression, robbery, neglect of the men who had fought and bled for the country, and truckling, for their own advantage, to the Presbyterians. Sir Peter Wentworth replied that it was the first occasion on which he had listened to such language from one who owed everything to Parliament. Cromwell sprang up,—exclaimed, "Come! come! I'll put an end to your prating,"—paced the floor, several times, in assumed indecision,—and, finally, gave the agreed-upon signal to the troops, by stamping his feet. Five or six files of musketeers entering, he cried out to the members, "For shame! Get you gone! Give place to honest men—to those who will more faithfully discharge their trust. You are no longer a Parliament; I tell you you are no longer a Parliament. The Lord has done with you: he has chosen other instruments for carrying on his work." Sir Harry Vane protesting, "This is not honest. Yea! it is against morality and common honesty," was answered, in a loud and angry tone, "O! Sir Harry Vane! Sir Harry Vane! The Lord deliver me from Sir Harry Vane!" Other members, successively, he stigmatised as adulterers, drunkards, gluttons, and extortioners. Regarding the Mace, lying on the table, he cried, "What shall we do with this bauble? Here," (to a soldier), "take it away"! Finally, addressing the Members, he earnestly declared, "It is you who have forced me upon this. I have sought the Lord night and day that he would rather slay me than put me upon this work." Then he caused the soldiers to clear the Hall,—had the doors locked, putting the key in his pocket,—and went home to his lodgings at Whitehall.

The supreme power was now vested in a new

Council of State,—appointed by Cromwell, and consisting of himself, eight officers, and four civilians. It soon became evident, however, from the unsettled condition of the public mind, that some kind of commonwealth must be

established : accordingly, the Lord-General and his friends decided upon summoning what was afterwards known as "**BAREBONES'S**," (or "**THE LITTLE**"), "**PARLIAMENT**," **JULY 4-DECE. 13, 1653**—consisting of members ("faithful, fearing God, and hating covetousness"), of Congregational churches throughout the Kingdom, who were chosen by the Council, from lists sent up by the pastors and office-bearers, 128 being selected for England, 5 for Scotland, and 6 for Ireland, of which number 120 took their seats. The Royalist, and other partial, writers, have represented this assembly as consisting mainly of low, illiterate, fellows, "artificers," (says Clarendon), "of the meanest trades." This is a great error: the majority were good, and a large number—including Viscount Lisle; Montague, (afterwards Earl of Sandwich); Howard, (afterwards Earl of Carlisle); Lockhart, (afterwards French Ambassador); Ashley Cooper, (afterwards Earl of Shaftesbury); Provost Rouse, of Eton; Colonels Hutchinson, and Sydenham; Blake, and Monk,—of high, standing, while nearly all were shrewd, hard-headed, practical, enlightened, and patriotic, politicians, well accustomed and well able to weigh and decide questions of the highest national moment. Amongst the most able of them, was one, Praise-God-Barebones, a London currier, and, after him, the assembly was nicknamed "**Barebones's Parliament**."

Upon this House, Cromwell, professedly, devolved the whole power of government, which they were to retain for 15 months, and, then, be succeeded by an assembly of equal number, chosen by themselves.

Having voted themselves a Parliament, this anomalous, but able, body proceeded to business. They passed several wise and beneficial measures,—*e.g.*

1. Revised Excise regulations.
2. Abolition of unnecessary offices, and reduction of salaries.
3. Subjection of public accounts to strict scrutiny.
4. Facilitation of land-sales.
5. Liberty of marriage before a civil magistrate only.

They, however, shewed themselves not so obsequious as had been expected, by him, to Cromwell, who, with his friends, determined to end the assembly, and place the supreme power in his hands. Accordingly, in a very thin

House, Sydenham, one of the members in league with the Lord-General, abruptly proposed the

Dissolution of Barebones's Parliament, (Decr. 13),—and the resignation, by formal deed, of its power into the hands of Cromwell. The Speaker, Rouse, also a Cromwellian, at once left the Chair and the Hall, followed by most of the others present : Colonel White, with a party of soldiers, ejected the rest, and the House was again locked up.

At first, Cromwell refused the offer of the supreme power, but, the document being signed by a pseudo-majority, he, finally, agreed to accept it, and a deed, termed the "Instrument of Government," (drawn up, it is supposed, by Lambert and a council of officers), embodied the new Constitution. This being privately arranged, Cromwell went, in procession, to Westminster Hall, and, there, was published the

Instrument of Government, Decr. 16, 1653.

Articles :—

1. Cromwell to be "Lord-Protector of the Commonwealth," during life,—and have a successor appointed, by the Council, on his decease.

2. The legislative power to be vested in Cromwell, and a Parliament,—the latter to consist of 400 Members for England, and 30 each for Scotland and Ireland ; and to be summoned, at least, every three years, and sit, at least, five months consecutively,—all bills passed by the House to be presented to the Protector for his assent, but to become law without that consent, if the latter were not given within 20 days,—and the Protector, subject to the consent of the House, to have the appointment of the great offices of State, and the control of the Army and Navy.

3. The executive to be vested in Cromwell, aided by a Council, to consist of not more than 21, or less than 13, who should enjoy office during life, or good behaviour,—and he, with the Council, to have the right of making peace or war, and, generally, of treating with foreign states.

4. No taxes to be levied except by common consent in Parliament.

5. A standing army of 20,000 foot, and 10,000 horse, for England and Ireland, to be established, and funds provided for its support.

6. All professing faith in Christ, except Papists, Prelatists, and teachers of licentiousness, to be protected.

On seating himself, Cromwell was formally entreated, by Lambert, in the name of the three nations, to accept the office of Protector. On his signifying his consent, the Instrument of Government was read, and Cromwell swore to observe its articles.

2. *Under Oliver Cromwell's Protectorate, Decr. 16, 1653—Sept. 3, 1658:—*

At home, (save by enemies of him and his principles), and abroad, Cromwell was readily recognised.

The "Instrument" necessitating the calling together of a Parliament, the needful steps thereto were taken during 1654. The smaller boroughs, open to bribery and corruption, were disfranchised,—and of the 400 English members, 270 were returned by the counties, and the rest by London and the larger boroughs, while the voting was restricted to those possessing an estate of £200 value. Of the members returned to this,

CROMWELL'S FIRST PARLIAMENT, SEPT. 3, 1654—JAN. 23, 1655,—there were several Presbyterians, and Republicans.

Notwithstanding the pains that had been taken in "packing" it, the *House shewed itself independent and refractory*, from the first, for, having listened to the Protector's opening harangue of three hours long, and elected Lenthal their Speaker, they commenced *discussing the Instrument of Government*, and, Cromwell, greatly enraged, forbade the members to discuss the fundamentals of the new Constitution, and demanded from all the signing of an engagement to adhere to the existing "government in a single person and a Parliament." At the same time, he placed guards at the doors of the Hall, to prevent the entrance of non-subscribers.

Many of the more independent members, (including the Republicans), refused to sign: the rest consented, but continued their attempts to curb the Protector's power, and effect changes in the "Instrument." They had just embodied certain of the latter in a Bill, which they were

preparing to pass when, unexpectedly to them, *Cromwell dissolved the House*, after an angry, slipshod, speech, in which he declared that its continuance was not for the national welfare, *Jan. 22, 1655*. The dissolution was unexpected, as the five months' *minimum* for the existence of the House did not expire, (reckoning by calendar months), till Feb. 3: Cromwell, however, chose to count, (as was the practice in the Army and Navy), by lunar months.

As Parliament had broken up before granting any supply,

Cromwell now levied a tax of £60,000 monthly on his own authority,—in this, again, imitating Charles I., in those very practices which had brought him to the scaffold! The amount was so small, however, in this case, that no difficulty ensued.

For refusal, however, to pay certain customs' dues, on the ground that they had not been imposed by Parliament, a London merchant, named

George Cony, was committed to prison!—He sued out his Habeas, whereupon *his counsel*,

Maynard, Twisden, and Windham, were sent to the Tower, for alleged seditious licence of speech, but were speedily released.

The case was never tried on its merits.—Chief-Justice Rolle, not wishing to decide against the Protector, resigned rather than condemn the accused unjustly,—and Glyn, who succeeded him, persuaded Cony to submit.

These arbitrary proceedings of Cromwell admit of no palliation!

Anxious to govern with a shew of constitutionalism, Cromwell summoned his

SECOND PARLIAMENT, SEPT. 17, 1656—FEB. 4, 1659.

—In spite of every effort to secure a House unanimous in his favor, the Protector, to his angry disappointment, found the elections, in numerous cases, adverse to himself. To meet this difficulty, he ordered the returns to be examined by the Council, and about 100 of the new Members to be declared disqualified, some on moral, others on political, grounds. On the assembling of the House, guards were set, with orders to admit only those who had warrants from the Council, and the unfortunate hundred found themselves, thus, debarred from taking their seats.

To their indignant remonstrances and protests, Cromwell replied, with literal justice, that the "Instrument" had made provision for such action on its part as the Council had taken in the matter.

The *proceedings* of this House, in its *first Session*, were mainly:—

1. **Voting supplies**,—no decision, however, being come to as to the source whence they should be obtained.

2. **Discussing private bills**,—of no great interest, in which much time was wasted.

3. **Altering the Government**,—by means of the "*Humble Petition and Advice*."—Being able to count upon a majority, Cromwell determined to endeavour, by their means, to advance himself to the lofty position in the State at which he had long aspired. Accordingly, having, with hopeful result, sounded the Members, by the agency of Colonel Jephson, a Bill was brought forward by Alderman Pack, one of the City representatives, termed the

"**Humble Petition and Advice**," May, 1657,—which differed from the former "Instrument" only in proposing that Cromwell should

1. *Assume the title of King.*

2. Receive a settled revenue.

3. Have the appointment of his successor.

4. Govern by the advice of two Houses of Parliament, the new one to be termed "the other House,"—to be appointed by Cromwell,—to sit for life,—and exercise some of the functions of the former House of Peers.

This measure encountered great opposition, especially from the Major-Generals of the Army, and the officers dependent upon them, Lambert, (who aspired to succeed Cromwell), being foremost in antagonism to it. Nevertheless, it passed, by a large majority, and a

Committee was appointed to reason with the Protector, and induce him to lay aside the scruples which he professed to feel against embracing the offer. The consultation between them and him lasted several days. Cromwell was, really, only too ready and anxious to accept the honor, but he found such strenuous opposition from his own family connections, (*e.g.*, Fleetwood, his son-in-law), and from those most devoted to him, that he was, reluctantly, compelled to decline the regal dignity.

The "*Humble Petition*," (with the omission of the article concerning Cromwell's proposed change of title), was, however, *retained*, in place of the "*Instrument*," as the basis of government, and, accordingly, the Protector was empowered to name his successor,—had a fixed revenue assigned him,—and had authority to name a second Chamber.

These changes being agreed upon, "*Cromwell*, as if his power had just commenced from this popular consent, was *anew inaugurated*," as Protector, "in Westminster Hall, after the most solemn and most pompous manner."

Though compelled, against his own wish, to refuse the regal dignity, *Cromwell* was, during the remainder of his life, *sovereign in all but the name*.

Immediately upon the adoption of the "*Humble Petition*," he brought his son *Richard* to Court,—began to initiate him into public business,—and treated him as his chosen successor. The

Second Session of Parliament commenced Jan. 20, 1658. —Two Houses were summoned, (in accordance with the "*Petition*"). Cromwell had chosen, to compose his new House of Peers, 60 individuals, comprising some half-dozen of the old nobility, the rest being mostly *parvenus* of the Revolution, (*e.g.*, Whitelocke, Pride, Fleetwood, Desborough, and Claypole). This creation of an Upper Chamber was the most ill-advised and unfortunate of Cromwell's schemes: the old nobility invited refused to sit,—the people generally, in whom the sentiment of respect for aristocracy was strong, jeered contemptuously at an assembly of Peers manufactured out of draymen, and shoemakers,—and the "*Levellers*" were enraged at the appointment of a privileged class. Moreover, by drafting so many of his adherents into the Higher Chamber, the Protector made so many vacancies in the Lower that he was, perforce, necessitated to allow a number of the excluded to return, on their consenting to taking the oaths, the result being that he lost his power over the Commons, and the latter, instead of proceeding to the transaction of real business, launched into critical discussions concerning the rights and powers of the Upper House. In vain the Protector urged them to proceed to their proper work,—whereupon, he, with his habitual decidedness, *dissolved*

Parliament, Feb. 4, with angry and violent expressions, his last words to the Commons being "Let God judge between you and me!"

During the few remaining months of his life, the Protector ruled without a Parliament, and with very great severity.

When he was mortally attacked, and it was known that the next fit would be fatal to him, a deputation was sent, by the alarmed Council, to the Protector, to ask his will, as to his successor. He was, however, too far gone to reply coherently and fully. They, then, asked him whether he did not intend his eldest son, Richard, to assume his office, to which query it is said that he was just able to return a simple affirmative. Soon after, he died, Sept. 3, 1658.

3. *Under the Protectorate of Richard Cromwell:—*

Richard succeeded his father with pacific facility. Fleetwood, (in whose favor it was supposed Cromwell had made a will), renouncing all pretension to office,—Henry Cromwell proclaiming his brother in Ireland, and General Monk performing the same office in Scotland,—and the Council, the Army, and the Navy readily accepting him, while 90 loyal addresses poured in from various parts of the country, congratulating him upon his accession.

One of the Protector's first steps was to call a *new* PARLIAMENT, JANU. 29,—AP. 22, 1659,—which proceeded, at once, to an examination (ending, after a severe opposition from the leading officers and others, in a Confirmation), of the "*Humble Petition.*"

Meanwhile, Lambert, Fleetwood, and the other Army leaders, (who were, at heart, angry at the elevation of a man who had never fought for the Commonwealth), were caballing against the Protector, (whose weak character they knew), with the support of the by-no-means feeble Republican party in the Army, and induced him to give his consent to calling a

General Council of Officers,—who, forthwith, *proposed that the whole military power should be given to some one in whom they might all confide*—thus, virtually, providing for the establishment of an Army-supported, (and, thence, certain-to-be-successful), rival of Richard.

Parliament, alarmed equally with the Protector, at this daring scheme, at once *passed* a

Vote forbidding any Meeting, or General Council, of Officers, without the Protector's orders or consent.—This measure precipitated the crisis. The *officers*, (forming what is called the "*Cabal of Wallingford House*"), hastened to Richard, and vehemently *demand*ed the *dissolution of Parliament*, Desborough actually threatening him should he refuse. The *Protector* weakly *yielded*, and, accordingly, *dissolved* the Assembly, *April 22*.

This act sealed his own demission. He continued to hold office, nominally, a month longer, and, then, quietly resigned.

4. *From Richard Cromwell's Abdication to the Restoration* :—

Upon the resignation of the second Protector, the supreme power was in the hands of the officers forming the "*Cabal*," (or, as some say, in Fleetwood, its head). By them, after much deliberation, the

"**RUMP**" of the "**LONG PARLIAMENT**" was **RESTORED**, **MAY 7, 1659**,—the number of Members responding to the summons being little over 70.

The *first act* of this fragmentary assembly was the *appointment of a*

Committee of Safety, May 9, to which was added a **Council of State, May 10**,—consisting of Fairfax, Lambert, Desborough, and 12 other soldiers, and Bradshaw, Whitelocke, Ashley, Cooper, and 13 other civilians. They, then, issued a

Declaration,—that the government would be without a "single person, Kingship, or House of Peers, and that all writs, &c., should again run in the name of the Keepers of the Liberties of England."

Demands now came from Wallingford House, which shewed that the Army leaders intended to be the actual rulers. The Members, though few in number, were, mostly, experienced, energetic, and ambitious, men, and were determined to wield really, as well as nominally, the supreme power, and not to be the mere puppets of the Generals. Accordingly, these demands were unheeded, and, after

much acrimonious wrangling, the House took the decided step of passing a

Vote that all Commissions should be received from the Speaker, and assigned to him in the name of Parliament.

This step greatly enraged the Officers, and would have led to some hostile demonstration on their part, had not apprehensions of a common enemy — the newly-allied Royalists and Presbyterians,—rendered a hollow, tacit, truce, imperatively necessary.

The conspirators having been defeated by him, Lambert and his party grew more and more overbearing and threatening, whereupon, the House passed a bold

Vote that Lambert, Desborough, and the other Generals should be deprived of their commissions,—a measure which brought about the

Exclusion of the “Rump” fragment, Oct. 13, 1659,—Lambert and his regiment going down to Westminster, and preventing the Members from taking their seats. The *government thus fell, again, into the power of the Army*, which the Officers defended, on the ground that it was lawful to rise against Parliament when it failed to maintain the just rights and liberties of the people. The next step of the Army chiefs was to appoint a

Committee of Safety, consisting of 23 persons, whom they invested with sovereign authority.

Throughout the country, there was, now, dissatisfaction at the policy of the Generals, and a melancholy foreboding of murder and confiscation on the part of the Royalists and gentry ; and of servitude on that of the people generally. As to Prince Charles, all hope seemed gone for ever for him. Meanwhile, however, there was preparing one of the most striking and best managed *coups d'état* the world has ever seen.

General Monk, the commander of the forces in Scotland, had been keenly watching events, since Oliver's death. He had, it would seem, long had at heart the design of effecting the restoration of the Royal line, and saw in the state of affairs ensuing upon the exclusion of the “Rump,” the key-note of action. *Taking the title of “Assertor of the Ancient Laws and Liberties of the Country,” he sent a pro-*

test to the Council against the high-handed proceedings of the Generals. Then, cashiering all his officers of whom he had the slightest doubt, he obtained the oaths of the rest to stand by him,—and letters announcing his and their determination to support the Parliament, were sent to the Speaker of the excluded House, to the Council at Wallingford House, and to the Commander of the Fleet.

The *Council*, rightly suspecting the ulterior purpose of Monk, directed *Lambert* to march North, with a force to *stay the Scotch Commander*, on his way, should he advance into England. Accordingly, the former set out, and reached Newcastle, where he stopped to assemble a larger army.

In his absence, all went wrong with the cause he represented.—

Hasilrigge, and *Morley*, took possession of *Portsmouth*, on behalf of the Parliament,—in the City, riots broke out, with cries for a free Parliament, and taxation by that body alone ; and a sort of independent government was formed,—and Admiral *Lawson* came into the Thames with his squadron and declared for the Parliament, whereupon the captors of *Portsmouth* left that place, and hastened towards London, near which lay several regiments. These, being solicited by their former officers, (whom the Committee of Safety had cashiered), readily declared for the Parliament, whereupon, *Desborough* fled, *Fleetwood* resigned, and *Lenthal*, persuaded thereto by the Officers, caused the

“**RUMP**” to be **RESUMMONED**, (DEC. 26, 1659—MARCH 16, 1660).

Allowing himself to be amused by negotiations, *Lambert* remained in the N., inactive, his forces rapidly dwindling away, while

Monk marched upon the Metropolis, everywhere warmly greeted by the gentry, who universally expressed their hopes that he might be made instrumental in restoring peace and order. He reached *London*, with 5,000 troops, Feb. 3, 1660, and was, forthwith, introduced to the House, *Lenthal* heartily thanking him, in its and the country's name, for the services he had rendered his country.

The General, then, marched his men into the City, to exact from several citizens obedience to the Parliament, with whom he declared, in Common Council, that he in-

tended to unite his fortune, whereupon the whole of London went crazy, and put itself *en fête*.

He next ordered Parliament, in the name of the citizens, soldiers, and Commonwealth generally, to issue writs within a week for filling the House by the reinstatement of the excluded Presbyterian Members,—and to fix the terms for their own dissolution and the appointment of a new Chamber. At his invitation, the excluded ones went to the House, where they found themselves in a majority; the Independents, then, mostly, retired. The augmented, restored,

“Long Parliament” met again, Feb. 21, 1660, and proceeded to

1. Annul all the Votes concerning the exclusion of the Presbyterians in 1648.

2. Declare the Presbyterian faith to be that of the Church of England, and order a copy of the League and Covenant to be hung up in every Church.

3. Appoint a new Council of State, (strongly Royalist).

4. Fix Ap. 25 for the assembling of a new Parliament, (for which they, at once, issued writs).

They, then, broke up, their separation constituting the final

Dissolution of the immortal “Long Parliament,” March 16, 1660.

The Council of State now conferred on Montague, (a Royalist), and Monk, the command of the Fleet.

Up to this point, Monk had kept up a show of zeal for the Commonwealth, and had scrupulously abstained from opening communications with Charles; now, however, he sent a verbal message, by Sir Jno. Grenville, assuring the King of his attachment and services,—proffering advice as to His Majesty’s conduct,—and, (fearing lest Spain might keep him as a hostage for the restoration of Dunkirk and Jamaica), urging him to leave Spanish territory, for Holland, immediately. Charles, who was at Brussels, at once started, and narrowly escaped to Breda: had he been a few hours later in starting, doubtless, he would have been arrested.

Lambert had been sent, by Monk, (when the latter had secured the chief authority), to the Tower. He, now,

managed to escape, and to assemble some forces, but was defeated, by Ingoldsby, near

Daventry, April 21,—and taken prisoner, together with Okey, Axtell, and Creed.

The elections for the new Parliament were everywhere in favor of the Royalists and the Presbyterians, now united in the King's cause, and representing the national desire, which was emphatically and urgently in favour of the restoration of monarchy. The

"CONVENTION" PARLIAMENT, (so termed because not regularly summoned by the Royal act), assembled **APRIL 25, 1660**, and chose Sir Harbottle Grimstone Speaker.

The Peers, (excepting those who had sat in Charles I.'s Chamber at Oxford), were allowed to take their places in the Upper House.

Monk, in his further communications with the King's agents, had suggested that Charles should send a letter to the new Assembly, offering very favorable terms of reconciliation, and governmental proposals, thereby to win their goodwill.

Accordingly, a formal

Motion for the Restoration of Monarchy having been made, by Colonel King, and Mr. Finch, **April 27**, it was, by Monk's instructions, announced to the House, by **Annesley**, President of the Council, **May 1**, that Sir John Grenville had been sent over, and was then in waiting outside, with a communication from the King to the Commons. The announcement was hailed with the loudest acclamations,—Grenville was called in,—and the letter read, as well as an enclosed paper, setting forth Charles's intentions, and known as the

Declaration of Breda,—*promising*

1. A free pardon to all, (save those whom Parliament should thereafter except), who should, within forty days, return to their allegiance.

2. A free Parliament, in which all just rights should be resettled.

3. Religious toleration for all differences of opinion that would not disturb the peace of the Kingdom.

4. Settlement, by Parliament, of all questions affecting estates whose ownership had been altered by the Civil War.

5. That the army should be paid all arrears, and taken into the Royal service.

Copies of the same papers were delivered, and read, simultaneously, to the Lords, and were *received* by them *with equal fervor*. Without delay, the *Convention*, now, *passed, unanimously*, a

Vote that

1. "By the ancient and fundamental laws of the Realm, the **Government was, and ought to be, by King, Lords, and Commons.**"

2. **Charles be invited to come over, and ascend the Throne.**

Some few members ventured to suggest that it was advisable, before the King was restored, to have a clear settlement of those important questions which had caused the Civil War,—but in vain : and, thus, the Restoration was effected without a single guarantee against a recurrence of that misrule that had been the ruin of the young monarch's father and the origin of so much national woe.

A *Committee* was *appointed to draw up a reply to the "Declaration,"* and it, with the letter, was ordered to be published. *Parliament passed*, also,

Votes that

1. The **Arms of the Commonwealth be effaced.**

2. The **King's name be introduced into the Church Service.**

3. His accession date from the day of Charles I.'s death.

By order, and in presence, of the two Houses, the **King** was solemnly proclaimed, in Palace-Yard, Whitehall, **May 8, 1660**, after which, a deputed Committee of both Chambers was despatched to invite his immediate return, and assumption of the Crown.

Embarking at Scheveling, on board a fleet commanded by his brother, York,

Charles reached England safely, and landed, **May 25**, at Dover, where he was met by, and warmly welcomed, Monk, at the head of the nobility and gentry. From the coast to the Metropolis, his progress was one continuous ovation, and he entered London, amidst the maddest

excitement and most vociferous plaudits, **May 29**, the anniversary of his birthday,—the concurrence of the two events on the same day being regarded, by his friends, as the happiest of omens.

ECCLESIASTICAL, &c., AFFAIRS.

Primacy.—Vacant, (1645–1660.)

After the downfall of the Monarchy, the

Penal Laws against Nonconformists were abolished.

The *Commonwealth* was distinguished, in connection with ecclesiastical and religious matters, by

1. **"Mixed Religious Tolerance."**—Party writers have taken two extreme views on this point, and have found no difficulty in supporting them. One makes out the Commonwealth to have been a period of unparalleled religious tolerance, the other proves it one of cruel intolerance. It was really neither one nor the other, but a singular union of both. The universal tolerance claimed for it did not comprehend the Church of England or the Roman Catholics, and thus excluded the majority of the people. The use of the Common Prayer was proscribed with great strictness, and those clergymen who retained their incumbencies were compelled to give it up, or use it evasively," until the Protectorate of Cromwell, who shewed greater liberality. Under his rule, the clergy of the capital in some instances openly carried on worship, and he even promised Usher not to enforce the ordinance of 1656, (due to Royalist plots), excluding the clergy from holding fellowships and chaplaincies, and becoming schoolmasters, —unless they should be guilty of political offences.

"The Roman Catholics were in a worse case, for several priests were condemned to death for exercising the functions of their priestly office, and one actually suffered the extreme penalty."

The Quakers, too, were severely dealt with, *e.g.*, in the case of

"**James Naylor**, who had been an officer in the Parliamentary army. For professing some religious fancies," (*e.g.*, that he was "the Everlasting Son, the Prince of Peace"), "he was sentenced, by a vote of the Parliament, to be pilloried at Westminster, whipped thence to the Royal

Exchange, and there pilloried again: that at the latter place *his tongue* should be bored with a red-hot iron, and *his forehead* branded with a B.; he was then to be sent to *Bristol*, where he was apprehended, and in that place to be carried on horseback, riding backwards through the city, *publicly whipped*, and then sent back to Bridewell in London, there to be kept to hard labor during the pleasure of the *Parliament*."

2. "The Appearance of many Singular Forms of Sectarianism.—The appearance of the numerous sectaries, after the assembling of the Long Parliament, was but a natural result of what was termed 'independency,' or religious liberalism. So early as 1646, a writer gave a list of no less than sixteen sects then flourishing in England, and the number was afterwards greatly increased. The most singular were the *Quakers*, the *Muggletonians*, and the *Millenarians*.

The *Quakers* were founded by George Fox, a shoemaker of Drayton, Leicestershire, and distinguished by depending, not upon the written Word, but internal illumination; and the disuse of the sacraments and ordinary modes of worship.

The *Muggletonians* professed to be believers in John Reeve, and Ludowick Muggleton, the two last prophets and messengers of God. The heads of this singular sect alleged they could both cast out devils, and deliver men without fail to be damned, body and soul, to eternity.

The *Millenarians*, (or, *Fifth-Monarchy Men*), were those who believed in the coming of Christ to reign on earth for a thousand years, during which they themselves should be kings and priests. This sect gave Cromwell much trouble. By their creed, the government of a single individual was a sacrilegious assumption of the authority belonging to the only king, the Lord Jesus."

During the days of the Commonwealth, the most rigid austerity was enforced, as regarded all pastimes, &c.: the *Book of Sports* was abolished,—the Maypoles were cut down, and their revels, (and all others), forbidden—the theatres closed, and all stage performances prohibited. It was to the natural rebound from this Puritanical sternness that the terrible laxity of morals of the ensuing reign was greatly owing!

INVENTIONS, DISCOVERIES, AND IMPROVEMENTS.

Silk Throwers' Co. established, 1631.

Coffee introduced, by a Turkey merchant, 1652.

The Postal system was revised, and improved, 1656,
—greatly to the advantage of trade.

Posts had been established between many of the chief towns in 1635. This system was destroyed by the Civil War, and a Mr. Manley then farmed the conveyance of letters, for £10,000 yearly, until the introduction of the new plan. Under this arrangement, posts went, and arrived, on alternate days only, on most of the roads,—while in out-of-the-way districts there was but one service per week!

Transit of Venus first observed, by Horrocks, 1641.

VARIOUS MATTERS.

The Jews were allowed to settle in England, again, 1655, for the first time since their banishment under Edward I., 1290.

"Killing, no Murder,"—the title of a pamphlet, by Captain Titus, (or, as some think, Colonel Saxby), published in Holland, advocating the assassination of Oliver Cromwell, upon whom and the nation at large it made a profound impression.

COMMERCE, &c.

The foundation of our Navigation Laws was laid, by the celebrated

Navigation Act, Oct. 9, 1641.

Articles :—

1. No goods, or commodities, whatever, of the growth or manufacture of Asia, Africa, or America, to be imported into England, Ireland, or the Plantations, except directly in ships belonging to English subjects, and of which the master and the greater number of the crew were English.

2. No goods, or commodities, grown, produced, or manufactured, in any other country of Europe, to be imported into Great Britain except in British ships, or in such ships as are the real property of the people of the country or

It was not long before the young monarch discovered that he was a mere puppet and tool in the hands of the *Covenanters*, who, not content with keeping him without a vestige of power, actually *compelled him to issue a*

Declaration,

1. Expressing himself deeply abased and afflicted at his father's opposing the Covenant, and shedding the blood of God's people.

2. Bewailing his mother's idolatry, and the toleration thereof in his father's house.

3. Promising that he would have no enemies but those of the Covenant.

The English Government were, naturally, alarmed at these proceedings in Scotland, for they, rightly, judged that the ascendancy of the Presbyterians would be a death-blow to their power. Accordingly, they determined upon a war. Fairfax, who was a devoted Presbyterian, declined to undertake the command of the invasionary force, and resigned his commission, which was, accordingly, bestowed upon Cromwell, (who was recalled from Ireland), with the title of "Captain-General" of all the forces in England. At the head of 16,000 troops, mostly veteran "Ironsides," he crossed the Tweed July 16, to renew the

CIVIL WAR, (1642)-1651. In

1650:—

The country, from the Border to the Capital, the invaders found waste and deserted, the inhabitants, terrified by reports of the cruelties intended to be perpetrated by the English), having disappeared, after destroying their cattle and provisions.

Cromwell found Leslie, the Scotch commander, entrenched between Edinburgh and Leith, in so strong a position that attack was out of the question. After several vain attempts to entice the enemy into an engagement, the Captain-General was compelled, by sickness in his army and want of provisions, (for his supplies of which he depended upon sea-conveyance alone), to retire to Dunbar, "a seaport town, which lies in a valley, surrounded on three sides by an amphitheatre of hills, in which there are two narrow openings, one on the north, the other on the South."

Leslie, following Cromwell, took possession of the heights and the passes, thus shutting up the English army so

closely and completely that the only course open to Oliver, in order to escape destruction, appeared to be to embark his foot and artillery, for England, and cut his way through the environing foe, with the cavalry. The folly, however, of the Committee of Estates lost the Scots their almost certain triumph. Assured that, in answer to their prayers, the Lord had delivered "Agag," (as they termed Cromwell), and his host into their hands, and fearful lest he should slip out of them, they over-persuaded their unwilling commander to quit his position on the heights, descend into the valley, and give the English battle at

Dunbar, Sep. 3.—English victorious.

E. com.—Cromwell.

Scotch com.—David Leslie.

Cromwell, on seeing the enemy's forces descending, instantly perceived their fatal error, and, exclaiming, "The Lord hath delivered them into our hands"! gave orders for the attack. A terrible conflict ensued, at first in favour of the Scotch, but Cromwell's regiment, avalanche-like, bore down all opposition, and, in less than one hour, the Scots, though double in number, were utterly routed. Just before the decisive attack, the sun broke resplendently through a hitherto-obscuring fog, whereupon Cromwell cried, exultingly, "Now let God arise, and let his enemies be scattered"! a sanguinary flight and pursuit for eight miles followed the defeat. The victory was complete, the enemy's loss being 3,000 slain, and 10,000 prisoners. The remnant of the beaten army reached Perth.

After this triumph, the English general, giving up all idea of retiring, advanced upon

Edinburgh, which, as well as Leith, fell into his hands, and the whole of the

South speedily submitted.

Edinburgh Castle held out for three months, and, then, capitulated.

The approach of winter, and an attack of ague, compelled Cromwell to close the campaign, his sickness preventing his resuming hostilities till the succeeding July.

Charles was rejoiced at the defeat of the Covenanters, since it lessened the power of Argyle and Co., his task-masters. He determined to take advantage of circum-

stances to throw himself upon the support of the Royalists. Accordingly, he entered into correspondence with Murray, Athol, Huntly, and others of the party in the Highlands, and, escaping from Perth, under pretence of hawking, made an attempt, called the

"Start,"—to join them, but was followed, and persuaded to return. The escapade had its good result, for he was thenceforth treated with greater deference and consideration, being allowed to even preside at the Councils of the Committee.

In

1651:—

Charles was, with all pomp and solemnity, crowned, Jan. 1, at Scone, where, upon his knees, in the church, *he swore*, by the Eternal God, to

1. Observe the Covenants.
2. Establish Presbyterianism in Scotland and his family.
3. Rule according to law.
4. Root out all heresy.

Argyle then placed the Crown upon his head, and the nobles and the people swore allegiance to him. The

Campaign

Of this year was commenced by the Scotch, whose army assembled, as soon as the season admitted, under Hamilton, and Leslie, Charles joining the camp before Stirling.

Cromwell took the field in July, and, after various marches and counter-marches, crossed the Forth, and so pressed upon the enemy's rear that they retired, leaving open to him the seat of Government,

Perth,—which *fell* into his hands.

At this juncture, the King formed the daring scheme of marching into England, and advancing rapidly upon London. Most of his generals consented, but Argyle begged to be excused, and retired to his home.

With about 12,000 of the army, Charles, who calculated upon being joined, in England, by overwhelming numbers of Royalists and Presbyterians, broke up the camp at Stirling,—set out thence July 31,—and, swiftly traversing the Lowlands, *crossed the Border*, advancing South by way of Carlisle.

The movement was a complete surprise to Cromwell, who did not hear of it until three days after Charles had

started. As soon as the intelligence reached him, he sent off Lambert, post-haste, to harass the King's rear,—sent instructions to Harrison, (then at Newcastle), being on the flank,—and, leaving Monk, with 7,000 men, to finish the reduction of Scotland, himself set out, with the rest of the army, in hot pursuit, by way of York.

Meanwhile, Charles was finding his hopes of swelling his numbers fallacious : The English Royalists and Presbyterians, having had no warning of his approach, were not prepared to join him, and his own men, discouraged at the hazardous nature of the expedition, as it developed itself to them in its true colors, deserted wholesale. Thus, when, three weeks after his departure from Stirling, he reached Worcester, Aug. 22, he found his forces not larger than when he started, besides being utterly worn-out by severe forced marches.

The advance of the Scots, however, caused great consternation in the country, and in London there were many who condemned Cromwell for allowing Charles to out-general him, and some who even expressed suspicions of his fidelity.

The Captain-General arrived in the neighbourhood of the King six days after the latter's reaching Worcester, and, joining his forces to those of Lambert, Harrison, and Robert Lilburne, he fought the great battle of

Worcester, Sep. 3.—*Parliamentarians victorious.*

P. coms.—Cromwell; Lambert; Harrison.

R. coms.—Charles II.; David Leslie.

Cromwell attacked the suburbs of the city on all sides, and, after an obstinate struggle of four or five hours, forced his way into the streets, where the fight was decided, after a further furious struggle, which left them thickly strewn with dead. In this decisive engagement, which ruined Charles' hopes, and ended the Civil War, as far as England was concerned, the Royalists lost 3,000 slain, and 7,000 prisoners, while the small remnant who escaped were put to death by the country-people, "inflamed with national antipathy" against the invaders. Well might Cromwell write to the Parliament, on this eventful day, "The dimensions of this mercy are above my thoughts. It is, for aught I know, a crowning mercy!"

Of the prisoners, several of rank, including the Earl of Derby, were executed, and numbers of the rank and file were sent as slaves to the Colonies! The Duke of Hamilton, (brother of the late peer), was captured, and wounded, —and died soon after.

Monk, left behind by Cromwell, to finish the reduction of the country, *took*

Stirling Castle,—amongst the spoil being the public records and part of the *regalia*, which he sent to London,—*carried by storm*

Dundee,—which yielded plunder to the value of £200,000: he put all the inhabitants to death, according to Cromwell's example (in Ireland) and instructions.

This summary measure so terrified, (as was intended), their defenders, that

Aberdeen, St. Andrews, Inverness, and other towns, *capitulated*.

Argyle now made submission to the Commonwealth. The *authority of the English Parliament* was speedily *established throughout the country*, under the direction of Sir Harry Vane, St. John, and other commissioners, who were sent to settle the kingdom. An annual tax of £130,000 was levied for the support of the English army, and English judges were appointed to go on circuit, superseding the Courts of Session. Finally,

Cromwell incorporated Scotland with England,
Ap. 12, 1654.

Charles's Adventures,—after the battle of Worcester, constitute a narrative strikingly romantic and thrillingly exciting. Escaping from the city, about six o'clock, on the evening of the fight, he travelled, without drawing rein, 20 miles, accompanied by about 60 other fugitives. He, then, parted with these, for safety's sake, and, by direction of the Earl of Derby, betook himself to the house of one Penderell, a farmer, living at Boscobel, a solitary house, on the borders of Staffordshire. The honest yeoman, though the death-penalty was proclaimed against all who should countenance the King, and large rewards were offered for his betrayal, loyally sheltered his sovereign, disguising him as an ordinary laborer. On one occasion,

during the sojourn at Boscobel, Charles was compelled, by the appearance of some of the soldiers on the look-out for him, to take refuge amid the boughs of an oak, whence he saw his enemies searching, beneath him, amongst the trees, for himself, and heard them expressing their anxiety to capture him. The tree afterwards bore the name of the "Royal Oak," and it became the custom, (still remaining amongst boys, at least), in memory of the successful concealment of the King, to wear a sprig of oak on May 29, (the anniversary of the Restoration), which has, hence, been named "Royal-Oak-Day."

After many such hairbreadth escapes, in various disguises, and after having experienced the utmost fidelity and kindness from numerous individuals, (over 40, it is said), to whom he was compelled to trust, Charles reached, in safety, Shoreham, in Sussex, whence, after lying, for some days, *perdu*, in the roof of a house, (still shewn), he succeeded in escaping to Fécamp, in a small vessel belonging to a sailor, one Nicholas Tattersall, whose tomb, with inscription, (still legible), is to be seen in the grave-yard attached to the Old Parish Church, Brighton. The Royal fugitive reached France Oct. 17, about six weeks after the battle of Worcester.

IRISH AFFAIRS.

Upon the death of Charles I., his son was proclaimed in the island, by Ormond, who strenuously urged the young prince to come thither, so promising seemed the Royalist cause. The power of the Parliament was confined almost entirely to Londonderry, and Dublin, and the latter city was threatened with a siege.

Under these grave circumstances, it was determined to send over the doughty Oliver, to reduce the country to obedience: he accepted the posts of Lieutenant, and Generalissimo, and set himself earnestly about making speedy and effective preparations for the expedition.

Meanwhile, he sent over, to reinforce Colonel Jones, the Governor of Dublin, a body of 4,000 troops. The first engagement in continuation of the

CIVIL WAR, under the Commonwealth, in
1649,

was a battle at

Rathmines, Aug. 2,—*Parliamentarians victorious.*

P. com.—Colonel Jones.

R. com.—Marquis of Ormond.

The Marquis was besieging the place, when Jones, with the English reinforcements, surprised, and utterly routed, him, with loss of artillery, baggage, and ammunition; 1000 slain; and 2000 prisoners. This blow did irreparable mischief to the Royal cause.

Cromwell, with 12,000 veterans, and a heavy battering train, landed at Dublin, Aug. 15, amidst the greatest enthusiasm. After a fortnight's rest, he proceeded to form the *siege of*

Drogheda.—*Parliamentarians victorious.*

P. coms.—Cromwell; Ireton.

R. com.—Sir Arthur Aston.

which, strongly fortified, and garrisoned with 2,500 troops, promised a successful resistance. Two assaults were repelled, but the third, led by Cromwell and Ireton, in person, was triumphant, and the town was *captured* **Sept. 11**. Cromwell thus pithily describes the affair, "It hath pleased God to bless our endeavours at Drogheda; after battering, we stormed it. The enemy were about three thousand strong in the town. *We refused them quarter, having the day before summoned the town. I believe we put to the sword the whole number of the defendants. I do not think thirty of the whole number escaped with their lives; those that did are in safe custody for Barbadoes.*

The English next formed the *siege of*

Wexford.—*Parliamentarians victorious.*

P. com.—Cromwell.

R. com.—Colonel David Sinnott.

The town was taken by assault, **Oct. 11**, and, here, again, the garrison, between 2,000 and 3,000 strong, was massacred.

The consequence of these two massacres was what Cromwell intended—for

Cork, Youghal, Bandon, Kinsale, and every other place before which he appeared, *surrendered* voluntarily.

In the campaign of
1650,

which opened in January, Cromwell, with fresh reinforcements from England, continued the work of reduction.

Fethard, Callan, Gowran, capitulated voluntarily, and **Kilkenny, and Clonmel, were captured**, after a brave resistance.

Ormond now quitted the Island, leaving, to act in his stead, Clanricarde, who, finding affairs desperate, threw up his hand.

The beaten and dispirited Irish "were glad to embrace banishment as a refuge," and, with Cromwell's leave, 40,000 quitted their native country to take military service in foreign lands.

Cromwell was summoned home, to take the Scotch command, in May, and left

Ireton as Lieutenant,—with the task of completing the subjugation of the country. After reducing several places, he formed the siege of

Limerick.—Parliamentarians victorious.

P. com.—Ireton.

R. com.—Hugh O'Neil.

The town *capitulated Oct. 27*, after 15 months' brave resistance.

A month later, *Ireton died*, of pestilence. He was *succeeded* in the command by

Ludlow, who finished the subjugation of the Island, and made

Terms of Accommodation with the Irish Leaders, 1653.

Fleetwood, then, became Deputy,—being assisted in the civil government by four Commissioners.

The new authorities instituted an

Enquiry into the Murders proceeding out of the Rebellion of 1641,—issuing in the execution of about 200 persons.

Henry Cromwell was Deputy from Aug., 1654, to June, 1659, and, by his wise and conciliatory rule, placed Ireland in a better condition than it had hitherto occupied. This happier state of things is attributable to, also, new settlers, consisting of English adventurers who had subscribed money at the commencement of the troubles in Ireland, and of soldiers who had served under Cromwell, both of

which classes received, as, respectively, reimbursement, and arrears of pay, portions of estates confiscated from Romanists and Royalists, by an

Act for the Settlement of the Country, 1652,—whereby such forfeitures were decreed—to be regulated by the character of the offence.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS.

France.	Germany.	Spain.
LOUIS XIV.	FERDINAND III.	PHILIP IV.
	LEOPOLD I.	

Popes.

INNOCENT X.	ALEXANDER VII.
-------------	----------------

Stuart Line, (restored).

CHARLES II.

Dates of Birth, Accession, and Death.—At St. James's Palace, London, May 29, 1630; Jan. 30, 1649 (the Judges deciding, and Parliament voting, that, though he did not actually ascend the throne till May 29, 1660, he was king, both *de jure* and *de facto*, from the moment of his father's death), (crowned Ap. 23, 1661)—1685, Feb. 6, at Whitehall, London, of apoplexy, (some say epilepsy), with which he was suddenly seized Feb. 2: being bled, he so far revived that recovery appeared certain, but he speedily sank, and languished away. There were, apparently unfounded, suspicions that he was poisoned. He was so strong of constitution, and, owing to the care he took, so habitually healthy, that his illness and decease were to the nation as a thunderbolt. Upon his seizure, services, to entreat his recovery, were held in the churches, to which the people flocked in multitudes, thus showing how popular he was. He refused to receive the Lord's Supper from the Bishops attendant; but, by aid of his brother James, the Rev. Father Huddleston, (who had attended him after the battle of Worcester), was introduced, by a back stairway, into the sick-room, where-

upon, the dying King, declaring himself a Romanist, was received into the Papist Church,—confessed,—and received the Sacrament, and extreme unction.

He was buried at Westminster.

Descent, &c.—Eldest son of Charles I.,—Duke of Cornwall, by birth,—styled “Prince of Wales,” in public documents, from 1645, but, apparently, never formally created so.

On the breaking out of the Civil War, 1642, he was made commander of a cavalry troop, but, at Edgehill, when the Royal body-guard charged, he, and his brother James, with Harvey, (the celebrated physician), were *perdus*, behind a hedge!

He saw his father for the last time in 1644, when, with the rank of General, he went West: there he was so pressed, that he crossed over to Scilly, passing thence to Jersey, and, eventually, to Paris, (1646), where he joined his mother.

Soon, he removed to the Hague, where he remained till the assassination of Dorilaus, 1649, when he returned to Paris: finding the French Court uneasy at his presence, he passed over to Jersey, (which remained Royalist), but was compelled to quit the island, on the Parliamentarians preparing to reduce it, and retired to Breda.

He was proclaimed King, at Edinburgh, Feb. 5, 1649, and, having, reluctantly, agreed to the conditions proposed by Argyle and his party, sailed from Breda, and landed in Scotland, June, 1650.

After a futile “start,” to join the anti-Covenanting Royalists, and a *quasi*-reconciliation with the Covenanters, he was crowned, at Scoue, Jan. 1, 1651.

The same year he invaded England, with about 12,000 men, and advanced as far as Worcester, where he was overtaken, and utterly defeated, by Cromwell, Sep. 3.

From the time of his escape to France, till the Restoration, he spent his time in heedless pleasure, and dissipation, keeping up, however, a mock Court, which, consisting of his companions in exile, most of whom were like-minded with himself, was shamefully and shamelessly profligate.

During this period, he was, veritably, “a bird of passage.” After three years spent in France, he visited Spa, and Aix-la-Chapelle, and, then, took up his abode in Cologne,

"where his loose habits were sufficiently notorious": in 1656, he removed to Bruges, between which city and Brussels he alternated his residence, until the Restoration.

He was at Brussels when Monk, having cleared the way therefor, opened communications with him, regarding the Restoration,—but, by that General's advice, he escaped, very narrowly, to Holland, taking up his quarters at Breda, whence he sent the "Declaration of Breda" to the Convention Parliament, who, thereupon, voted his Restoration, Ap. 1660.

He was proclaimed May 8,—embarked at Scheveling,—landed at Dover, May 25,—and progressed, triumphally, to London, which he entered on his birthday, May 29, ("Royal Oak Day"), amidst the maddest excitement, and the most tumultuous and hope-fraught rejoicings.

Claim to the Throne.—*Good.*—He was not only the eldest son of Charles I., but there was no one else who had the shadow of a claim to the Throne, since William Seymour, the only representative of the Suffolk family, (to whom Henry VIII. had willed the Crown), and who was the legal heir at the accession of James I., and Charles I., died the very year that Charles II. was restored.

Married.—(May 20, 1662, in a private room, at Portsmouth, with Romanist rites), the Infanta Catherine, (of Braganza), (daughter of John IV., King of Portugal), 1638-1706.—She had been educated in a convent, and kept so secluded that, when her arranged marriage was announced to her, she had not been out of doors for five years!

The alliance was proposed by Portugal, with a view to strengthen her alliance with England, and Charles agreed to it because of the handsome dowry—£500,000; Tangiers, and Bombay; and allowance, to England, of free trade to India and the Brazils.

The union was most unhappy for Catherine, her faithless spouse neglecting her for others, and generally ill-treating her.

She suffered much through, also, her Romanism, during the heat of the Popish plots.

After Charles' death, she resided at Somerset House, till 1692, when she returned to Portugal, of which she was for some time Regent,—died suddenly.

She possessed considerable beauty, and elegance, (excelling in dancing) ; much humour ; and superior intellectual powers, well cultivated, music being her great *forte*, (she was the introducer into England of the Italian style of singing) : she preserved unspotted virtue, and even untarnished fame, in the most polluted Court England has ever seen, and bore her trials and indignities with a fortitude, and patience, that true religion alone could have inspired.

Issue.—*None legitimate*,—several children by his various mistresses,—e.g.,—

The unfortunate Duke of Monmouth, (executed in the next reign),—by Lucy Walters.

The Duke of Southampton, the Duke of Grafton, (ancestor of the present house), and the Duke of Northumberland,—by Barbara Villiers, (Duchess of Cleveland.)

The Duke of Richmond, (ancestor of the present house), by Louise de Querouaille, (Duchess of Portsmouth.)

The Duke of St. Alban's, (ancestor of the present house), by "Nell" Gwynne, the actress.

Character.—Tall ; of fine, manly, graceful, figure ; remarkably strong in constitution ; active, and fond of tennis, walking, and other athletic exercises : features somewhat harsh, but countenance, generally, lively, and expressive : in manners, and address, perfectly, and unaffectedly, polite, and, (owing to his having, during his exile, mixed familiarly with his companions—as well as to his natural disposition), distinguished by a charming and habitual "open affability, which was capable of reconciling the most determined Republicans to the Royal dignity" : conversed with a buoyant, winning, gaiety.

With keen, well-employed, powers of observation ; rapid comprehension ; correct, and solid, judgment ; and bright, ready wit, (of which there is proof, in the celebrated epitaph upon him,—

"Here lies our mutton-eating King,
Whose word no man relies on ;
He never said a foolish thing,
And never did a wise one."

and in his retort to the last two lines, *viz.*,—that they were quite correct, for *his sayings were his own, but his deeds were his ministers'.*)

Of high mental powers, and fine, extensive, culture ; a keen appreciator of Literature, and a great lover of

Science, (especially Chemistry), fostering, (though loving to bamboozle, by absurd problems), the Royal Society.

"As a sovereign, his character was dangerous to his people, and dishonorable to himself. Negligent of the interests of the nation, careless of its glory, adverse to its religion, jealous of its liberty, lavish of its treasure, sparing only of its blood ; he exposed it by his measures, which, however, were often the result of mere indolence," (and selfishness), "to the danger of a furious civil war, and even to the ruin and ignominy of a foreign conquest."

A low sensualist, and voluptuary ; without one really noble principle, or sentiment ; mean, and insincere.

His gaiety, and jollity, however, made him popular, and gained for him the name of "the Merry Monarch."

Hume calls him "a friendly brother, an indulgent father, and a good-natured master." It is true he was all these, when it *cost* him nothing : he was, then, to them, the same complaisant, easy-going, creature that he was habitually to all, but he never denied himself a single pleasure to shew practically his affection, or kindness, to them, and when his own enjoyment, and their benefit, or right, came into antagonism, the latter "went to the wall." Thus, *e.g.*, the members of his household were often in dire need, owing to the non-payment of their salaries, and Evans, the King's favourite harpist, (as Pepys tells us), actually died of sheer starvation, and had to be buried at the expense of the parish !

WARS.

1. WITH HOLLAND, (ALONE, 1665-1666 : WITH HOLLAND, FRANCE, AND DENMARK, *allied*, 1666-1667), (commonly styled "The Second Dutch War.")

Origin.—*Commercial jealousy on the part of England.*

The English merchants, finding that the Dutch easily maintained their commercial superiority, and successfully thwarted all efforts to extend the trade of England, complained to Parliament that

1. The Treaty of Westminster was not yet executed.
2. The Dutch damaged the English trade.

The Commons, thereupon, presented an address to the King, complaining of these wrongs done to the English

merchants, and promising to aid him in asserting the rights of the Crown.

Charles determined on war, and in the autumn of 1664, asked the Commons for their promised assistance, whereupon they cheerfully voted $2\frac{1}{2}$ million, *the largest supply ever yet granted* to an English monarch.

War was declared with Holland, Feb. 22, 1665.

Events :—

1. Before the Declaration of War :—

1664 :

Goree, and other Dutch stations, in Africa, were captured, by Sir Robert Holmes ; he, then, crossing to America, reduced

New Amsterdam, (which England had always claimed, since Cabot discovered it), and altered its name to "New York," in honour of the Duke of York.

As a reprisal, the

Guinea Coast was ravaged by De Ruyter, who, then, crossed to the West Indies, and took 20 English ships.

Meanwhile, two English fleets, scouring the Channel, captured 130 Dutch traders.

2. After the Declaration of War :—

1665 :—

The English fleet, 98 strong, blockaded the Dutch coast for a month, but, being compelled, by a storm, to retire, the Dutch fleet, of 113 sail, came out, and gave battle, in

Solebay, off Lowestoft, (Suffolk), June 3.—English victorious.

E. coms.—Duke of York ; Prince Rupert ; Earl of Sandwich.

D. com.—Admiral Opdam.

This was *the greatest naval victory yet won by England*. The Dutch lost Opdam, (whose ship blew up, while closely engaged with York's), and three other admirals, 18 ships and 7,000 men,—the English, one vessel, and 700 men.

In this engagement, York introduced the new method of fighting in line, (which continued in vogue till Rodney's great victory, 1782).

1666 :—

France joined Holland, against England, early in the year.

Cause.—*Fear*, on the part of Louis, that *England would become supreme at sea*, to the thwarting of his own ambitious designs.

The French alliance proved, however, but little helpful to Holland.

The English fleet, under Albemarle, and Rupert, 74 strong, after visiting, and ravaging, unimpeded, the coast of Holland, returned to the Downs.

Louis, now, gave orders to his admiral, le Duc de Beaufort, to sail, from Toulon, for the English Channel, the news of which reaching them, the English commanders separated, the Prince, with 20 ships, sailing to meet the French squadron.

It was supposed that the Dutch were not ready for sea, but, on leaving the Downs, Albemarle was astounded to see them, more than 80 strong, at the back of the Goodwin Sands, at anchor. With heroic rashness, he, though so inferior in force, gave *battle*

Off the North Foreland, June 1-4.—Dutch slightly victorious.

D. coms.—De Ruyter; De Witt; Van Tromp, (son of the old "sea-dog" of that name.)

E. coms.—Duke of Albemarle, (Monk); Prince Rupert, (at the close.)

This is *one of the most memorable naval fights on record*, both on account of its long duration, and the obstinate valour displayed! On the

1st.—Night fell without any decided success on either side. On the

2nd.—16 fresh ships joined the Dutch, and the English lost nearly half their fleet, whereupon Monk commenced a retreat. On the

3rd.—The retreat continued, but the Dutch came up about 2 P.M., and were about to renew the fight, (which must have ended in the British being destroyed), when, happily, Rupert appeared on the scene, and formed a junction with Albemarle. On the

4th.—The fight was renewed with fresh vigour, and, the fleets coming to close quarters, was carried on with terrific violence, until the combatants were parted by a mist. The English were the first to retire to their harbours, and this, with the fact of their loss in ships being greater than that

of the Dutch, rendered the latter victors. 1,700 Englishmen, and 1,800 Dutchmen, fell.

The fleets of both nations soon re-fitted, and the Dutch Admiral took up his position at the mouth of the Thames, to wait for the French. There the English found him, and engaged him in *battle*,

Off the North Foreland, July 25.—English completely victorious.

E. coms.—Duke of Albemarle; Prince Rupert.

D. com.—De Ruyter.

There were about 80 sail on each side, and the fight was fierce and obstinate, but, at last, the Dutch fled, precipitately, with a loss of 20 ships and 4000 men, De Ruyter raging impotently at his defeat, and exclaiming, "What a wretch am I! Among so many thousand bullets, is there not one to put an end to my miserable life?"

All night, and the next day, the English pressed closely upon the retreating enemy, and only the Dutch Admiral's consummate management brought the shattered remnant into harbour.

Monk, and Rupert, now rode undisputed masters of the seas, and sailed up and down the coast of Holland, terrifying, and insulting, the enemy,—a detachment, under

Sir Robert Holmes, *attacked the shipping at*

Schelling, in the Vlie Roads, *and burned* the unfortified, wealthy, town of

Brandaris, 2 men-of-war, and 140 merchantmen, the total loss being £1,000,000. De Witt solemnly swore that he would never sheath his sword until he had his revenge—and *he kept his word!*

1667 :—

Charles, and Louis, engaged in secret negotiations.

The English Government, desiring, on account of the terrible losses, and consequent difficulties, resulting from the Plague, and the Fire, to close the war, opened negotiations with the enemy, at Breda.

Meanwhile, through Charles's keeping, for his own vile uses, (as attested by the best of authorities, Pepys), the last war-grant, (£2,390,000), instead of applying it to its legitimate purpose, our fleet was in the most disgraceful condition.

De Witt saw, and used his opportunity. Protracting the negotiations at Breda, he hurried on the naval preparations, and, suddenly, De Ruyter, with 70 sail, appeared at the Thames-mouth—to find the English totally unprepared, and helpless.

York, and Albemarle, doing the best they could under the circumstances, drew a chain across the Medway, and fortified it by some sunken, and three floating, ships:—while, to guard London, they sunk thirteen vessels at Woolwich, and four at Blackwall, and erected artillery platforms on the river-side: the train-bands, too, were called out.

De Ruyter divided his fleet into two parts: one, with a spring-tide, and east wind to favor, broke the chain, burned the vessels guarding it, and, entering the Medway, took, and destroyed, the fort of

Sheerness,—and burned several ships, and a valuable magazine, at

Chatham: it then dropped down the river again.

The other squadron sailed up the Thames, as far as Tilbury, but retired with the ebb-tide.

Thus “the roar of foreign guns was heard for the first and last time by the citizens of London.”

The Dutch Admiral made no further attempt in this direction, contenting himself with the humiliation which he had inflicted upon England.

He now amused himself, for some weeks, by sailing about, and insulting, the English shores, failing, however, in attempts to burn the shipping at Portsmouth, Plymouth, and Torbay. He, then, sailed home, having inflicted on England *the greatest national disgrace she has suffered since the Norman Conquest.*

The English Government, shortly after, concluded with Holland, France, and Denmark, (with whom there had been no real hostilities), the

Treaty of Breda, July 21, 1667.

Articles.—1. England, and Holland, to retain their present respective positions. (Thus the former kept her conquest of New York—her only gain by the War.)

2. France to receive Nova Scotia, and England to have Antigua, Monserrat, and St. Kitts.

3. Friendly relations between England and Denmark to be restored.

2. **WITH THE DUTCH**, (undertaken *in alliance with France*), 1672-1674, (commonly styled "*The Third Dutch War.*")

Real Origin.—Charles's promise, in "the Secret Treaty of Dover," to unite his arms to those of Louis, for the purpose of overthrowing Holland.

(Louis's motive in entering upon the War, was, merely, to gratify his ambitious designs of conquest and annexation).

Knowing that he had no real grievance against Holland, Charles endeavoured to provoke the Dutch to hostilities, by various slights, and insults, (e.g., replacing Temple, as Ambassador, by Downing, whom the Dutch regarded as the bitterest enemy of their Republic). All, however, proving in vain, he alleged, in justification of War, the following

Ostensible Causes.—1. The unwillingness of the Dutch to regulate the commerce of the two countries with India.

2. The detention of English traders in Surinam.

3. The refusal of the Dutch to honor the English flag.

4. Personal insults offered, by the Dutch, to himself, by medals, and publications.

The King received a grant from Parliament the year before, which was nearly, or quite, exhausted; he dared not go to the Commons again, yet, money must be had, before hostilities could be commenced. In this dilemma, Shaftesbury, (then Lord Ashley), or Clifford, suggested to him the ingenious, but infamous, expedient of

Closing the Exchequer, Jan. 2, 1672,—which, to his eternal disgrace, he adopted.—It had been customary, for bankers, and others, to advance large sums of money to the Government, to be repaid, with interest, out of the taxes, as they came in. There were, at this time, £1,300,000 thus lent, and it was coolly announced that this principal would not be repaid, but only interest, at 6% allowed.

England, (and France), declared War with Holland, Mar. 17, 1672.

*Events:—*1. *Before the Declaration of War:—*

1672:—

Attempt to seize the Dutch Smyrna-Fleet, Mar. 3,
—by Admiral Holmes,—which proved *unsuccessful*.

2. *After the Declaration of War:—*

1672:—

BY SEA:—

The Dutch fleet sailed against the Allies, and brought them to battle, in

Southwold Bay, (Suffolk), May 28.—English victorious.

E. coms.—Duke of York; Montagu, Earl of Sandwich, (blown up, and killed, with most of the crew, in *The Royal James*).

D. com.—De Ruyter,

The French squadron kept aloof, while the English and Dutch fought a terrific action, in which both suffered heavily, and which ended by De Ruyter's sheering off.

BY LAND, (*France alone being engaged*):—

Louis XIV., with 100,000 men, crossed the frontiers of Holland, "to drown 'the shopkeepers' in their own dykes."

At first, he carried all before him, city after city yielding, until he had overrun the three provinces of Utrecht, Overijssel, and Gueldres.

The commander of the forces of the Republic, William, Prince of Orange, (William III. of England), then in his 22nd year, finding himself unable to resist the French advance, retired to Amsterdam, and, on Louis' approach, cut the banks of the sluices, and laid the whole surrounding country under water—effectually defending the city: the other provinces followed his example.

In this terrible crisis, the whole country, except Amsterdam, was prepared to make any sacrifices, for the sake of peace, and, accordingly, ambassadors were sent to Louis, and Charles, to ask terms. Both monarchs proposed such intolerably severe conditions, as threw the wretched Dutch into despair.

Their distress was aggravated by the raging amongst themselves, of a bitter war of factions:—*viz.*, that of John

De Witt, Grand Pensionary, (a noble, virtuous, man), and that of the Prince of Orange. The father of the latter had been a Stadtholder of Holland, but, after his death, a Perpetual Edict, excluding his son from that office, had been passed: the young Prince's party clamored for the repeal of the Edict, and for his appointment as Stadtholder,—while De Witt, and his supporters, were fiercely opposed thereto.

The feeling in favor of William grew daily stronger, as the people realized that he alone could save them from their implacable foes, and, finally, Dort setting the example, they everywhere rose in insurrection, and compelled their magistrates to sign the repeal, and recognize the Prince as Stadtholder,—which movement was followed, Aug. 4, by the massacre, by the mob, of John De Witt, and Cornelius, his brother.

Holland, now united under William, rejected the hard conditions offered them, and determined to defend to the last inch the ground that remained to them.

Louis, realizing that, in the then state of the country, he could do nothing more, and, undoubtedly, daunted by the spirit displayed by the Dutch, retired, leaving, however, garrisons in some of the fortresses which he had taken.

Henceforth, the War, by land, and by sea, languished.

1673:—

Rupert succeeded York, (whom the Test Act had driven from office), and, putting to sea, with 90 sail, fought, in conjunction with a French fleet, *three battles*,

Off the Dutch Coast, in May, June, and August, respectively.

English victorious in first two—Dutch in third.

{ *E. com.*—Prince Rupert.

{ *F. com.*—Comte d'Estrées.

D. com.—De Buyter.

Meanwhile, the French Alliance, and the Dutch War, had become extremely unpopular in Parliament, and throughout the nation, and the former, on meeting in the autumn, declared they would grant no more supplies, unless it were clear that the Dutch rejected all reasonable terms of peace.

Charles, realizing that he would get no money as long as hostilities continued, determined to put off the execution of his Secret Treaty with Louis, (as far as Holland was concerned), till a more convenient opportunity, and to conclude a separate peace, which was, accordingly, done, by the

Treaty of Westminster, Feb. 9, 1674.

Articles.—1. All possessions to remain as at the commencement of the War.

2. Holland to honour the British flag, between Finisterre and Van Staten, as a matter of right,—not of compliment.

3. The English settlers in Surinam to be allowed to sell their property, and retire.

4. The disputes between the English and Dutch traders to India to be referred to arbitration.

5. Holland to pay £200,000 in lieu of all claims but those referring to India.

(Charles apologized to Louis for this breach of their compact, explaining the quandary in which he had found himself, and Louis accepted his explanation.)

THE WAR ON THE CONTINENT went on, the Prince of Orange, with the support of the Emperor and the German States, maintaining his cause gallantly.

Danby, and others, (with the nation at their back), entreated Charles to join Holland, with a view to effectually thwart Louis' ambitious schemes. Charles consented, and began to take measures to raise men, but the Commons so distrusted him, that they stopped the preparations, fearing that the troops would be used against the liberties of England, if they gave him the control of them. And they were right in their suspicions, for, at this very time, when he actually pledged his Royal word (!) to the Commons to employ the supplies which he begged of them in carrying on hostilities against France, he had signed a

Second Secret Treaty with Louis, 1676.

Articles.—1. Neither monarch to enter on any treaty without the other's consent.

2. Charles, *in consideration of a pension of £100,000 annually, to remain neutral, and to prorogue, or dissolve,*

Parliament, should they attempt to force upon him any treaty of which Louis might disapprove!

Louis distrusted Charles as much as his people did, and, to make sure of England's not joining Holland against him, entered into private negotiations with the popular party, bribing many of its chiefs to oppose war with France, and affording them proofs of Charles's treachery.

The marriage of the Prince of Orange with the Princess Mary so annoyed Louis, that he withdrew Charles's pension, whereupon, the latter again declared his intention of going to war with France, and demanded of the Commons, for that end, supplies, which they again refused, for the same reason as on the former occasion, unless he would, first, declare war.

The war on the Continent was ended by the
Treaty of Nimeguen, (between France, and Holland),
Aug. 10, 1678.

Articles.—Louis to

1. Restore Maëstricht to Holland.
2. Restore Charleroi, Oudenarde, Ghent, and some other towns, to Spain.
3. Keep Franche-Comté, and sixteen fortresses in the Netherlands.

PLOTS, AND REBELLIONS.

1. INSURRECTION OF FIFTH-MONARCHY MEN, (who believed that Christ was on the eve of establishing his Kingdom on earth), in London, 1661.

Origin.—The *dissolution* of the Convention Parliament *without* the promised settlement of matters of religion.

Leader.—Venner, a wine cooper.

These poor fanatics, only 60 in number, who attended a small chapel, in the City, fought with desperately obstinate valour, and were overpowered with the greatest difficulty: most of them were taken, and hanged.

2. INSURRECTION, (in which the *Fifth-Monarchy Men* were said to be concerned), in Yorkshire, and Westmoreland, 1663.

The affair is neither clear, nor important, but was made a pretext for passing the Conventicle Act.

3. (Alleged) POPISH PLOTS, 1678.

(Alleged) *Purpose*.—*To subvert Protestantism, and re-establish Popery, in England,—and assassinate the King, and place the Duke of York on the Throne.*

(Alleged) *Leaders*.—Coleman; Lords Stafford, Powis, Petre, Arundel, Bellasis, Carrington, and Brudenel; Fathers Whitebread, Ireland, Grove, and Pickering; Langhorne, and Sir George Wakeman.

Taking crafty advantage of the popular dread and horror of Romanism, certain villains invented, with a view to their own profit, this series of alleged plots. The

First intimation of the matter was given to the King, himself, Aug. 12, by Kirby, a druggist, who, approaching Charles, as he walked in the Park, said, "Sire! Keep within the company: your enemies have a design upon your life, and you may be shot in this very walk." Asked what he meant, he declared that two men, Grove, and Pickering, had engaged to shoot the King, and that Sir George Wakeman, the Queen's physician, had undertaken to poison him,—and that he had obtained the knowledge of these matters from Dr. Tonge, whom he would, if desired, introduce to the King. Accordingly, Tonge was sent for, and laid before Charles papers, which contained, in the form of 43 articles, information of a (pretended) Popish Plot, declaring that they had been thrust under his door, and that he had suspicions, but was by no means certain, that one Titus Oates was the author.

The King treated the thing as a hoax, but the Duke of York, finding that Jesuits, and other priests, including his own confessor, were amongst those accused, insisted on a thorough sifting of the affair by the Council.

The agents of the Council found that Kirby, and Tonge, were in close communication with Oates: accordingly, the last-named was summoned before the Council.

Titus Oates was a disreputable scoundrel.—Born 1619, son of a Baptist preacher, educated at Merchant Taylors', and Cambridge, he had been, successively, Baptist preacher, and clergyman, (being ordained shortly after the Restoration, and, after having been prosecuted for perjury, being dismissed from a naval chaplaincy, and losing his gown on an infamous charge). He, then, professed to be a convert to Romanism, and, on that pretence, was admitted to the Jesuit College at Valladolid, only, however, to be

expelled for immorality, which same result followed a residence at St. Omer's, where, also, he had succeeded in gaining entrance.

It was by the knowledge of the names of the leading Romanists, and matters connected with the Jesuits, gained in these last two situations, that he was enabled to concoct his plot, which, by the aid of Tonge, he proceeded to do, on his return to England, after his second expulsion.

Fearing, from the King's cool reception of the matter, that it might collapse, and knowing that, if it only became public, the people would take it up in earnest, Oates, previous to appearing before the Council, went, with his two co-plotters, before a magistrate, Sir Edmundbury Godfrey, and made full affidavit of the alleged Plot, in all its particulars.

At the examination, before the Council, into

Titus Oates's, (alleged), Popish Plot, its pretended revealer declared, (as he had done in his affidavit), that

1. The Pope had made over Great Britain to the Jesuits, who had arranged a Government, and allotted the Church benefices.

2. Charles was to be put to death, as a heretic, and the Crown given to the Duke of York, provided he would receive it as a gift from the Pope, and extirpate Protestantism throughout the Kingdom.

3. Père la Chaise, (Louis' confessor), had sent £10,000 to London, as a reward for Charles's assassination,—and other foreign Church dignitaries had promised further largesse to his murderer.

4. All the Protestants in the country were to be massacred.

5. London was to be ignited, in several places, by fire-balls.

6. The Fire of London was the work of the Papists, for the sake of plunder.

The informer accused Coleman, (the Duchess of York's secretary), and the Romanist Lords, Stafford, Powis, Petre, Arundel, and Bellasis, of being conspirators,—declaring that if they, and their papers, were seized, abundant confirmation of his statements would be found.

On cross-examination, he utterly broke down, contradicting himself wholesale.

Charles saw clearly through the whole affair, and, so, there can be no doubt, did the rest of the Council, but Danby, who was bitterly opposed to the French and the Romanist interests, at Court, and who saw in this movement the means of turning the eye of Parliament from his own past acts, professed to believe the whole story; the people, generally, also, (especially the country gentry)—so great was their animosity to the Papists—swallowed it greedily.

Acting on Titus's suggestion, Danby procured the

Arrest of Coleman,—and the seizure of his papers. Amongst these was a copy of a remarkable letter to Père la Chaise, in which there was, certainly, abundant evidence that there "was, really and truly, a Popish Plot, though not that which Oates and his associates pretended to reveal,"—but, merely, a conspiracy to restore the Romish faith, in which Charles himself, (instead of being marked for assassination), was concerned, and from which, as usual, he was to derive pecuniary advantages. Not one, however, of all Oates's diabolical charges receives the slightest confirmation from this letter,—in fact, they are, by it, disproved. Yet, so excited was popular feeling, that the scheme revealed by Coleman's papers was almost universally accepted as identical with Oates's alleged Plot. At this juncture, occurred the mysterious

Death of Sir Edmundbury Godfrey, about two months after the first mention of the Plot: he was found dead, in a dry ditch, near Primrose Hill, with his own sword stuck fast in his body,—marks of, (apparently), strangulation round the neck, and bruises on his chest.

It was evident that he did not owe his death to any robber, since his jewellery and money were still on his person. Without any further enquiry, the cry was raised that he had been assassinated by the Papists, because he had received Oates's affidavit.

The excitement was terrific: the body was carried into the City, attended by vast crowds, and received a magnificent public funeral, headed by seventy clergy, in full canonicals, and followed by a dense concourse of people.

There seems no doubt that the Romanists were perfectly innocent in the matter,—for not only was there no end to be answered by putting out of the way the man who had

taken Oates's deposition, but, in the then state of public feeling towards themselves, it would have been perfect madness, (besides being a piece of impolicy of which one cannot believe the Romanists capable), to have perpetrated such an act.

It has been generally supposed that he must have committed suicide, he being of an extremely saturnine, desponding, disposition,—but *the author of this work ventures to suggest that he was murdered by Oates & Co.*, for the furtherance of their infamous designs.

His death goaded the already over-excited people to fury. On the

Meeting of Parliament, Oct. 21,—Danby brought the matter of the Plot before the Peers, and there was appointed, in the Commons, a

Committee of Investigation, before whom Oates, and Tonge, appeared, with pretended fresh revelations. The result of their sittings was a

Resolution, (adopted by both Chambers), "*that there hath been, and still is, a damnable and hellish plot, contrived, and carried on, by the Popish recusants, for assassinating the King, for subverting the Government, and for rooting out, and destroying, the Protestant religion.*"

The noblemen accused by Oates were committed to the Tower, and wholesale arrests of the Romanist rank and file were made.

Parliament, further, appointed a solemn national fast, and voted addresses for the removal, from London, of Popish recusants, and for calling out the train-bands of London, and Westminster,—while they declared Oates to be "the Saviour of the Nation," and recommended him to the King, much against whose will the informer was, accordingly, assigned a lodging in Whitehall,—protected by guards,—and gratified by a pension of £1,200 annually.

The credence, and importance, which Parliament assigned to the Plot, mightily fortified popular opinion, and intensified the national excitement.

So strong, and general, indeed, was the popular sentiment, that Charles, (who took every safe opportunity to ridicule it), was compelled to appear to believe in it.

In accordance with the resolutions of Parliament, measures were taken for the defence of London.

Proclamation, ordering all Romanists, (not being householders), to quit London.

Oates's good fortune now induced another villain, named Bedloe, to come forward with fresh lies.

Captain William Bedloe was, if possible, a greater scoundrel than Oates : he had, originally, been stable-boy to Lord Bellasis, but had, afterwards, turned swindler and thief, and had been convicted for robbery.

Bedloe's, (alleged), Plot was forthwith investigated by the Council. He declared that

1. Sir Edmundbury Godfrey's murder had been perpetrated in Somerset House, (the Queen's residence), by Papists, some of whom were her servants,—and three of the latter removed the body.

2. Spain, and France, were preparing on a grand scale for invading England.

He implicated Lord Carrington, Lord Brudenel, and others.

His narrative was greedily accepted as true, and strongly corroborative of Oates's,—a fresh wave of national rage and horror arose,—and Parliament committed to custody all those accused by Bedloe, while they rewarded him with £500.

The readiness with which this second batch of concoctions was received induced the miscreant informers to colleague together, and take a higher, and more impudently audacious, step,

Oates's and Bedloe's, (alleged), Plot, while it contained the articles of the two former ones, (now ingeniously harmonized by the two rascals), actually *implicating the Queen in the design to murder her husband !*

Oates appeared at the bar of the Commons, and, in a loud voice, cried, " I, Titus Oates, accuse Catherine, Queen of England, of high treason."

Charles, honorably, took his wife's part, saying, " They think I have a mind to a new wife ; but, for all that, I will not see an innocent woman abused."

The Commons, however, gave ear to the monstrous calumny, and expressed their sentiments in an address to the King ; but the Lords refused credence to the charge, which, accordingly, was dropped.

Meanwhile, the

Trials of the, (alleged), Conspirators, had commenced.

Stayley, a banker, was first tried, condemned, and executed,—then

Coleman was arraigned.—His letters were produced, and Oates and Bedloe gave evidence against him : he, too, was executed, Dec. 3. Then followed three Jesuits,

Ireland, Grove, and Pickering,—who were accused of signing, with fifty other Jesuits, the resolution to assassinate Charles : they, likewise, suffered, Jan. 24, 1679.

Seroggs, the Chief-Justice, bent on convicting the prisoners, disregarding all testimony in their favor, peremptorily ordered the Jury to find them “Guilty.”

At the gallows, they firmly, but strenuously, asserted their innocence,—but these declarations made no impression.

For some time, the alleged murderers of Sir Edmund-bury Godfrey could not be brought to trial, because there was only one witness, Bedloe, against them : presently, however, the requisite additional evidence was obtained. France, a Papist silversmith, had been accused of complicity in the deed, by Bedloe, and had, on denial thereof, been thrown into a noisome dungeon, where he was induced, by sufferings and threats, to make a mock confession, upon the strength of which, and of Bedloe’s evidence,

Three Servants of the Queen were condemned, and executed, for Godfrey’s murder.

The next victims to suffer were

Whitebread, Provincial of the Jesuits, and four others of the Order, and then

Langhorne, a distinguished lawyer : in these cases, Oates and Bedloe were the witnesses, and the spectators expressed their exultation at the result by loud cheering, while, so great was the popular rage, that witnesses for the defence were, on entering Court, nearly lynched.

As the year advanced, however, the popular fury rapidly abated. The first decided symptom of this appeared, and the first check to the informers was given, on the trial of

Sir George Wakeman, the Queen’s physician, and three Benedictine monks,—at which, notwithstanding the hard swearing of Oates, and Bedloe, the Chief-Justice charged favourably, the jury gave credence to the witnesses for the defence, and the prisoners were acquitted, July 18.

Oates and Bedloe were so enraged at this result, that they abused the Judge, to his face, in Court,—and accused him to the Council, of favoring the accused.

From this time forward, the nation gradually lost all interest in the Plots.

In the Houses, however, the ball was still kept rolling, since the Plots formed a convenient weapon in the hands of the Opposition.

On the meeting of

Parliament, Oct. 21, 1680,—there was passed a

Resolution,—confirming the vote of the preceding Parliament, concerning the reality, and the character, of the Plots.

They proceeded, also, to thank, and reward, the informers,—asked the King for pensions, and places, for them,—and recommended Dr. Tonge for the first valuable Church preferment that might be vacant.

The Exclusion Bill being thrown out by the Lords, the Commons determined to revenge themselves by bringing to trial the Popish lords lying in the Tower, Stafford being chosen as the first victim. The

Trial of Viscount Stafford, before the Peers, lasted six days, Oates, Dugdale, and Turberville, being the witnesses. The aged nobleman defended himself, declaring his innocence, with a gentle, pathetic, persuasiveness, while repeatedly expressing the most unfeigned wonder at the impudent audacity of his accusers. He was, however, condemned, by 55 votes to 31, receiving the verdict with the exclamation, “God’s Holy Name be praised”!

Stafford’s Execution, Dec. 29, 1680,—was a most affecting scene. The popular feeling had flared up momentarily, against him, on his trial, and his sentence was hailed with exultation, but, on this day, the people assembled round the scaffold maintained a tearful silence, broken by, only, sighs, and groans, at the pious fortitude displayed by the aged victim,—and with difficulty could reply, “We believe you, my lord”! “God bless you! my lord”! to his simple, earnest, assertions of innocence, uttered in trembling accents. The executioner, himself, was disarmed: twice his courage failed him, as he raised the axe, and a profound sigh escaped him, as, with a third effort, he succeeded in performing his office. “All the spectators seemed to feel

the blow; and when the head was held up to them, with the usual cry, 'This is the head of a traitor'! no clamour of assent was heard."

This was the last execution on account of the "Popish Plots": it conduced still further to shake belief in them, and, ere long, the duped nation had completely recovered from its delusion, and saw the whole affair in its right light.

The Plots were, however, still, occasionally, adverted to in Parliament, as a political expedient; but they may be fairly regarded as defunct, from the moment of Stafford's Execution.

The other Popish Lords remained in the Tower till 1684, when Charles released them, on bail, at York's request.

(Titus Oates's After-Career,—will be as well given here as elsewhere.—

He lost his pension, in consequence of the break-down of his evidence, on College's trial; later on in the reign, he was convicted of calling the Duke of York "a Popish traitor,"—cast in £100,000 damages,—and sentenced to be imprisoned, till it should be paid.

Under James II., 1685, he was convicted of perjury (in re his alleged Plot), on two indictments, and sentenced to disfranchisement, and a fine of 2,000 marks,—to stand in the pillory, at Westminster, and the Royal Exchange,—be whipped, from Aldgate to Newgate, and, two days later, from Newgate to Tyburn,—to be imprisoned for life,—and to be pilloried five times a year. It was intended that the severe whipping should be his death, but, by friendly care, he recovered.

Under William III., his sentence was remitted, and a pension of £400 settled upon him. Died 1705.)

4. THE MEAL-TUB PLOT, 1679.

(Alleged) Purpose.—To distract attention from a real plot.

(Alleged) Leaders.—The chief of the Presbyterians.

The nation had, in consequence of their reception of Oates's, and Bedloe's, fabrications, become so credulous in the matter of plots, and the two informers had made such a good thing of it, that another needy villain,

Dangerfield—who had been burned in the hand, transported, whipped, pilloried four times, fined for cheating,

outlawed for felony, convicted of coining, and, in fact, run the gamut of crime, and public infamy—determined to try and make his fortune by concocting a plot on the other side.

Accordingly, having prepared the papers necessary, he obtained an introduction to several leading Papists, and, finally, to the King, and the Duke of York, and declared that, during a recent illness of Charles, the Presbyterians had conspired to raise an army, and seize the Government.

At first he was credited, and the King, the Duke, and others, rewarded him, but before long, he was committed to Newgate, for attempting to deceive the Government, by means of forged papers.

Having, now, time for reflection, he saw clearly that Popish were more popular than Presbyterian plots, and, accordingly, changed his tale, declaring that the *quasi*-Presbyterian conspiracy was a sham one, concocted by the Romanists, to hide a real Popish plot, and that he had been offered money to kill the King.

He gained nothing, however, by his fraud.

He had declared that the papers relating to the sham Presbyterian plot were to be found in a *meal-tub*, (whence the name of the, (alleged), conspiracy), in the house of a certain Romanist, (where he, himself, had, no doubt, deposited them), which turned out to be the case.

He brought the matter up again, on the opening of Parliament, 1680, accusing the Duke of York of having instigated him to forge the papers of the sham Plot, and of having paid him for so doing,—which statements greatly influenced the House in passing the Exclusion Bill.

(Under James II., Dangerfield suffered similarly to, but less severely than, Oates.)

5. THE RYE HOUSE PLOT, AND THE REVOLUTIONARY PLOT, 1683.

1. The Rye House Plot.

Purpose.—*To assassinate Charles and the Duke of York, and to raise the City.* Charles went yearly to the Races, at Newmarket, on the road to which place, Rumbold had a farm called “the Rye House,” (whence the name of the Plot): it was intended that a cart should be overturned, at this spot, to stop the Royal coach, and that the conspirators should, then, fire upon the occupants, from the hedges, and make off across country.

Leaders.—Bumbold, (a farmer, and maltster), and Walcot—both old Parliamentary officers; Bumsey, a military adventurer; Ferguson, a Scotch minister; Hone; and Keeling.

2. The Revolutionary Plot.

Purpose.—Generally—to *overthrow the Government*: almost each conspirator, (as will appear), had his own special ulterior views.

Leaders.—Earl of Shaftesbury; Duke of Monmouth; Lord William Russell; Earl of Essex; Lord Howard; Algernon Sidney; and John Hampden, (grandson of the great patriot.)

These Whig leaders, alarmed at the King's outrages on liberty, laid their heads together, to raise an insurrection, and change, (or reform), the Government.

The matter was mooted in the spring of 1681, when Charles was seized with illness, at Windsor: Monmouth, Russell, and others, incited by the unquiet Shaftesbury, agreed, in case the attack should prove fatal to the King, to rise, with a view to preventing the Duke of York's succession.

Charles recovered, and the design remained in abeyance, (though not abandoned), especially owing to Shaftesbury's imprisonment, and trial.

When, however, Charles appointed the new sheriffs, the conspiracy was revived, and the City, as well as numbers of the nobility and gentry, was interested therein. Shaftesbury and Monmouth wished to precipitate the rising, but Russell's more prudent counsels prevailed.

Shaftesbury, then, feeling himself very insecure, quitted his house, and hid himself in the City, where he remained for a time, chafing over the enforced delay of the plot. At length, unable to bear the strain on his feelings, and becoming still more alarmed for his safety, he fled to Holland, Nov. 1682—never to return.

The conspirators' plans progressed prosperously after his departure. A Council was appointed, consisting of Monmouth, Russell, Essex, Howard, Sidney, and Hampden: by their efforts, not only the City, but, also, Argyle and his party, was induced to join the movement, and insurrections were arranged with the Whig party in Cheshire, and the West.

With regard to the

Ultimate design of the Main Conspirators :—

Sydney, and Essex, wished for a *Republic*.

Monmouth had hopes of obtaining the *Crown* for himself.

Russell, and Hampden, aimed, merely, at *excluding the Duke, and reforming the Government*.

Howard, a *principleless* man, had no particular political views, and was ready to adopt that policy which would most conduce to his own interests.

Owing to the raising of the City being in the programme of both, the two parties of conspirators became acquainted with each other's design, and communications passed between them. But there never was any community of purpose, as regarded *the assassination of the King*: the idea was *never entertained*, and would have been scouted, *by the leaders of the Revolutionary Plot*.

The *Rye House Plot* failed, owing to the King's returning from Newmarket some days sooner than he had intended.

Keeling, one of those concerned in that affair, betrayed the conspiracy to the Government, whereupon a number of the implicated were arrested. Amongst these was

Rumsey, who, basely, gave information about the *Revolutionary Plot*, stating, specially, that its members had been in the habit of meeting at the house of a wealthy wine-merchant, named Shepherd, in the City.

Shepherd was arrested, and was easily terrified into naming those conspirators whom he knew. Measures were at once taken for their arrest: Monmouth, (as did, also, afterwards, Grey, and Sir Thomas Armstrong), escaped,—Russell and Howard were captured.

Howard, on being examined, turned traitor, and, on his information, Essex, Sidney, and Hampden, were arrested.

Most of the conspirators engaged in the *Rye House Plot* were executed, their trials amply revealing the design to assassinate the King.

The conspirators of the other Plot were then dealt with: no attempt was made to accuse them of complicity in the design of murdering Charles, the latter thinking that he would be able to get rid of these determined and formidable enemies to his arbitrary measures on the charge of High Treason, in designing to levy war against him.

Lord Russell was tried, condemned, and executed, (July 21, 1683) ; Essex was found, in the Tower, with his throat cut, on the day of Russell's trial,—the coroner's-jury bringing it in "Suicide," though the deed was, largely, attributed to Charles and his brother, who had, that morning, visited the Tower.

Sydney was then arraigned, and shared Russell's fate, (Dec. 7.)

Hampden, too, was put upon his trial, but convicted of only a misdemeanour, and fined £40,000.

Monmouth was induced, by Halifax, who had found out his hiding-place, to write two very affectionate, submissive, letters to the King, at which the latter's heart so re-kindled with fondness, that he allowed him to return to Court, and induced him, by a formal pardon, to give a full account of the plot.

His party, hearing of this, lost all confidence in him, whereupon, he caused it to be spread amongst them that it was false that he had made any such revelations, and they, believing him, exclaimed, loudly, that it was a mere invention of the Court. His denial, and its result, reached the ears of Charles, who was so incensed that he ordered Monmouth out of, first, his presence, and, then, the Kingdom.

PARLIAMENTARY, AND OTHER POLITICAL, AFFAIRS.

Charles's First Council was wisely chosen, the most able men being selected : his chief Ministers were, however, taken from amongst his faithful friends,—

Sir Edward Hyde, (now created Earl of Clarendon), being *Lord Chancellor, and Prime Minister.*

Charles, early, published a

General Pardon and Indemnity, from which, however, a large number of persons were excepted,—while he issued a

Proclamation,—declaring that any of his father's judges who did not yield themselves prisoners, within fourteen days should receive no pardon, or indemnity : nineteen surrendered,—some escaped,—and others were captured, in the attempt to do so.

THE CONVENTION PARLIAMENT, (which had restored Charles), **APRIL 25–DECEMBER 29, 1660**,—continued to sit, in order to complete the settlement of the Nation.

The following were the

Chief Political Acts of this Assembly :—

1. Fixing the Royal Revenue,—in doing which, they

(1.) Voted the total, settled, allowance at £1,200,000 annually—*the largest income any English monarch had yet received.*

(2.) Gave Charles tannage, (*i.e.*, 3s. on every tun of wine imported), and poundage, (*i.e.*, 1s. in the £ on all imported articles, but wine), for life.

(3.) Abolished Purveyance, and Tenure of Lands by Knight-service, (converting them into freeholds), together with all the “incidents,” (whereby the *last relic of the Feudal System was destroyed*).

(4.) Granted, in lieu of the revenue hitherto derived from these abolished sources, a permanent Excise duty on beer, spirits, and other liquors.

2. Disbanding the Army.

3. Deciding upon the Punishment of the Regicides, and others.—The Convention had voted, shortly before Charles’s arrival in England, that not more than seven persons should be executed, and forfeit their property. Now, however, the Lords voted that all who had signed the death-warrant of the King, and five others, should be placed at the bar: the Commons, more merciful, protested—the result being a compromise, whereby 29 were to be tried.

The Houses decreed, also, that the bodies of Cromwell, Ireton, and Bradshaw, should be disinterred, and hanged, at Tyburn.

4. Settlement of the Question as to Restitution of the Crown, and Church, Lands,—which had, under the Commonwealth, been sold, by authority of Parliament.

The result of the deliberations on the matter was a pretty general expression of opinion amongst the Members that the Crown lands should at once be resumed by the King, unconditionally, but that compensation should be made to the holders of Church property.

Clarendon, however, took the matter out of the hands of Parliament, and succeeded in recovering all the lands, without compensation to the unfortunate purchasers.

Parliament was prorogued early in November, and dissolved, Dec. 29.

Meanwhile, in the recess, there took place the

Trial of the Regicides, &c.,—before 34 commissioners.

The 29 arraigned were all condemned, and, *Oct. 1660, 10 were executed, viz.*:—Harrison, Scot, Carew, Clement, Jones, and Scrope,—all judges on Charles's trial: Axtel, who had guarded the Court, and Hacker, who was in command on the day of the execution; Cook, the solicitor for the people of England; and Hugh Peters, the wild, fanatical, Baptist, Army-Chaplain.

(Scrope suffered most unjustly, since he was one of the nineteen who surrendered, in consequence of Charles's Proclamation.) On

Jan. 30, 1661, the anniversary of Charles I.'s death, the resolution as to the dead regicides was put into operation: the bodies of

Cromwell, Ireton, and Bradshaw, (whose estates were forfeited, also), were dragged from their tombs, and *hanged*, at Tyburn, after which, their heads were cut off, and fixed in Westminster Hall. The remains of, also, Cromwell's mother, and daughter; of Pym; and of Blake (!), were disinterred,—removed from Westminster Abbey,—and flung into a hole in the adjacent churchyard!

Later on in the reign, three of the escaped regicides,

Barkstead, Okey, and Corbet, were seized, in Holland (!), by direction of Downing, the English ambassador,—brought to England,—and *executed, Ap., 1662.* Charles's

SECOND, (some call it his First), **PARLIAMENT**, ("THE PENSION PARLIAMENT"—so called because many of its members took bribes from Charles, and from Louis: termed, also, "THE SECOND LONG PARLIAMENT") **MAY 8, 1661—JAN. 24, 1679**,—was almost entirely composed of Royalists, and was passionately loyal.

The first great business of this Parliament was the *establishment of the King's power*, and of the *supremacy of the Church of England*, which Clarendon was able to accomplish, since there were, in the newly-elected Commons, only 56 Dissenters.

1661:—

The Covenant; and the Acts for erecting the High Court of Justice, and for declaring England a Commonwealth, were ordered to be burned, by the common hangman.

There was, then, passed a

Resolution that every Member should take the Sacrament, according to the forms of the English Church, May 17. The

Bishops were then restored to the House of Lords.

A few months after, Parliament relinquished the power of the sword, in a

Statute,—declaring that the military command was vested in the Crown,—while the Preamble actually denied the right of using even defensive arms against the King.

They passed, also, a

Statute regulating the Presentation of Petitions,—enacting that no bearer of any petition to Monarch, or Parliament, should be accompanied by more than 10 persons.

Their most important achievement, was the

Corporation Act, Decr. 19, (intended to break the power of Dissenters, in cities, and boroughs),—*enacting* that all civil officers of corporations should

1. Have taken the Sacrament, according to the rites of the Established Church, within twelve months of their election.

2. On election, swear

(1.) To abjure the Solemn League and Covenant.

(2.) The Oaths of Supremacy, and allegiance.

(3.) The Oath of "Non-Resistance,"—viz., "I — do declare, and believe, that it is not lawful, upon any pretence whatsoever, to take arms against the King, and that I do abhor that traitorous position of taking arms, by his authority, against his person, or against those that are commissioned by him."

1662:—

Government, knowing the dissatisfaction of the Puritan party in the Church of England at the recent revision of the Book of Common Prayer, brought in, and Parliament readily passed, an

Act of Uniformity, which became law **May 19**,—*enacting* that every beneficed clergyman should; between **May 19** and **Aug. 24**, (the Feast of St. Bartholomew !),

1. Receive ordination from a bishop, if he had not already done so.

2. Read aloud, before his congregation, on some Sabbath, a declaration that he gave his unfeigned assent, and consent, to everything contained in the Book of Common Prayer.

It required him, also, to

3. Take the Oaths of Canonical Obedience, and Non-Resistance.

4. Abjure the Solemn League and Covenant.

2000 failed to read the Declaration, and were ejected, (without a penny compensation, and—so cruelly ingeniously had the time of their expulsion been calculated—with the loss of the year's tithes, which would be due at Michaelmas): what the majority of them suffered, in consequence, were a long, sad, narrative, (happily, not called for here.)

These exiles were, afterwards, termed "*Nonconformists*." **Stafford's Attainder** was reversed.

Trial of Sir Harry Vane, and General Lambert, June 2, 1662,—for alleged treason against Charles, in having exercised, respectively, civil, and military, functions, under the Commonwealth, when he was *de jure* King.

They had been excluded from the Indemnity, and sent to prison, but Charles distinctly promised they should not die. They were, now, for no fresh alleged offence, brought before the Court of King's Bench.

Vane, in spite of a fine defence, based on the plea that he had only obeyed Parliament—the supreme authority under the Commonwealth,—was condemned, and *executed*, **June 14**: **Lambert**, though condemned, *was reprieved*.

1664:—

Parliament voted, (to please the King, who disliked the statute, on account of its stringency), the

Repeal of the Triennial Act, (passed 1641), **March**,—providing, however, in a general clause, "that Parliaments should not be interrupted above three years at the most."

Before the end of the reign, the people had ample cause to lament this repeal.

The clergy ejected by the Act of Uniformity had continued to hold services, and preach, after their expulsion, in so-called "conventicles," and in private houses. To put a stop to this, there was now passed the

Conventicle Act, May 16, 1664,—declaring all assemblies of more than five persons, besides the members of a family, for worship not according to the Church of England, to be seditious,—and *enacting*—that those over sixteen years of age present at such meetings, be fined £5, or imprisoned for three months, for the first offence,—be fined £10, or six months, for the second,—and for a third offence, to pay £100, or be transported for seven years. Any justice of the peace might convict summarily, in such cases. (A

Second Conventicle Act, passed 1670,—lessened the penalty on hearers at such meetings, but laid heavy fines on preachers, and on any who should lend their houses, for such services,—while Clause 13 ordered "That the" Conventicle "Act, and all clauses therein contained, shall be construed most largely, and beneficially, for the suppressing of conventicles.")

1665 :—

Parliament, in consequence of the Plague, sat at Oxford, and voted Charles £1,250,000—to be raised in two years, by monthly assessments.

On pretence that the Nonconformist clergy had embraced the opportunity, while ministering in London, (they were almost the only ministers who remained there) during the Plague, to preach sedition, there was passed the cruel

Five-Mile Act, Oct. 30,—*enacting* that any Non-conforming clergyman who refused to take the Oath of Non-Resistance, and to swear that he would attempt no alteration in Church or State, must not, under penalty of a fine of £40, and six months' imprisonment,

1. Come, except if travelling, within five miles of any corporate town, or any place where he had ever ministered.

2. Act as tutor, or schoolmaster, (about the only calling left open to him !)

By the Uniformity, and the Conventicle, Acts, these unfortunate sufferers for conscience' sake "had been rendered incapable of gaining any livelihood by their spiritual profession; and, now, under colour of removing them from places where their influence might be dangerous, an expedient was fallen upon to deprive them of all means of subsistence."

The Church party cannot be blamed for taking measures to restore the Church Constitution and Ritual, which had been abolished under the Commonwealth; but they deserve the severest censure for their intolerant persecution of those whom they had expelled from their communion. The only palliation of their conduct is, that *they only made the same use of their power that the predominant religious sect always did in that age.*

1666:—

Parliament began to display symptoms of waning loyalty, in consequence of Charles's prodigality, and of indications, which some of his late acts had given, that he inherited the Stuart creed of Royal prerogative.

Their mistrust was first shewn when, having voted £1,800,000 supply, they insisted, (a thing they had never done before), on certain conditions, before they would let the King have it.

1667:—

On the meeting of Parliament, the first matter of importance was the

Impeachment of Clarendon.—He had not, in the course of his administration, pleased any party, but, on the contrary, had come to be disliked by all,—by Charles, for not obtaining for him, at the Restoration, such a fixed income as would have rendered him independent of Parliament; for his staunch Protestantism; and for his unconcealed abhorrence of the King's profligacy,—by the Presbyterians, for his decided Episcopalianism,—by the Cavaliers, because he had prevented them from obtaining the estates to which they considered they had a right,—and by the people, generally, who attributed to him the sale of Dunkirk; the non-payment of the sailors; the humiliation of the Dutch appearance in the Thames and the Medway; and the unsatisfactory conclusion of the War with Holland.

Charles, glad to get an opportunity to rid himself of him, advised Hyde to resign, and, on his refusing, on the ground that this would be a tacit confession of guilt, took from him the *Great Seal*,—and ordered him to quit the country, which he, reluctantly, did.

From Calais, he forwarded, to the Lords, a vindication of his conduct, which the Peers sent down to the Commons, as a libel, and which was, by a vote of both Houses, burnt, by the hangman.

Parliament then decreed that, in default of appearing, Clarendon should be *banished for life*, a resolution to which Charles, in spite of the earnest entreaties of the Duke of York, gave his assent,—another instance of his fidelity !

The eyes of Parliament had now become so thoroughly open to the fact that Charles had misappropriated vast sums of money, that they agreed to a

Bill appointing Commissioners to examine and audit the public accounts.

The King's popularity, however, had now begun to wane, not only in Parliament, but throughout the nation, as testified by Pepys,—“ It is strange how everybody do, now-a-days, reflect upon Oliver, and commend him, what brave things he did, and made all the neighbour princes fear him ; while here, a prince, come in with all the love, and prayers, and good-liking, of his people, who have given greater signs of loyalty, and willingness to serve him with their estates, than ever was done by any people, hath lost all so soon, that it is a miracle what way a man could devise to lose so much in so little time.”

After Clarendon's fall, the government was placed in fresh hands, forming the notorious

“ **CABAL** ” **MINISTRY, 1667-1673**,—of which the following were the

Principal Members :—

Sir Thomas, (afterwards, Lord), Clifford.

Lord Ashley, (afterwards, Earl of Shaftesbury.) The Duke of Buckingham.

Lord Arlington, (previously, Sir Henry Bennet.) The Earl of Lauderdale.

The appellation of this Ministry was suggested by the initials of the names of its chiefs, making up the word. "*Cabal*," (meaning *a secret, intriguing, clique*), was in use before this time; some, however, ignorant of this, assert that the word was now first coined.

Louis XIV., taking advantage of the rapid decline of Spain, laid claim to the Spanish Netherlands, in right of his wife, Maria Theresa, daughter of Philip IV., of Spain, and, undertaking an invasion to enforce his denied demand, took place after place with such ease that it was evident all the country must speedily fall into his hands. Holland would, then, of course, be his next aim.

Under these circumstances, Sir William Temple, English ambassador at Brussels, urged the formation of a league with Holland.

Charles was opposed to the proposal, but his Ministers prevailed upon him to yield.

Accordingly, there was formed the
Triple Alliance, Jan. 13, 1668, between England, and Holland, afterwards joined by Sweden.

Louis found himself compelled to give way before this formidable League, and plenipotentiaries of all the powers concerned, met, soon after, at, and agreed to the

Treaty of, Aix-la-Chapelle, May 2, 1668,—whereby Spain resigned to France the towns taken by Louis, but was guaranteed in the safe possession of the rest of the Spanish Netherlands.

Meanwhile, Charles had been pondering how to obtain money, so as to render himself independent of the national purse-holders, and had decided to resort to Louis.

Accordingly, soon after the conclusion of the Triple Alliance (!), he began, secretly, through the agency of Buckingham, to sound Louis on the subject, offering to abandon the Dutch alliance, if he were made independent of Parliament. The French King, nothing loath, sent over Charles's sister, Henrietta, Duchess of Orleans, to arrange the affair. The King met her at Dover, and, after considerable negotiation, there was drawn up between them the infamous

Secret Treaty of Dover, May 22, 1670.

Articles :—1. Charles to

(1.) Publicly, with his brother James, profess himself a Papist, (when a convenient time should present itself.)

(2.) Abandon the Dutch alliance, and join Louis in a war against Holland.

(3.) Maintain the Bourbon claim to the Spanish Crown.

2. Louis to

(1.) Pay Charles an annual subsidy of £200,000.

(2.) Assist him with 6,000 troops, in case of an insurrection in England.

The principal members of the "Cabal," as well as Charles, signed the Treaty.

Louis sent over, with Henrietta, a fascinating young French lady, Louise de Querouaille, who, (as was intended), captivated the King : he took her to London, made her Duchess of Portsmouth, and remained greatly attached to her till his death,—while she employed her power over him in the French King's interests.

1670:—

Parliament met in the Autumn, and, ignorant of Charles's recent treachery, voted large supplies at the earnest instance of the Ministers.

As soon as this was done, the Houses were prorogued.

This same year, the

Court of Common Pleas decided that juries are not liable to be fined for their verdicts. Amongst the victims of the increased persecution which the Second Conventicle Act gave rise to, were

William Penn, and William Mead, Quakers, who were tried for riot, because they had spoken to an assembly, in Gracechurch Street. In spite of the animus against them displayed by the magistrates, the jury acquitted them, whereupon Bushel, the foreman, and his fellows, were fined 40 marks each, and, for refusing to pay, were sent to prison.

Bushel, thereupon, obtained his Habeas Corpus, from the Court of Common Pleas, and was brought before Chief-Justice Vaughan : the return made was that Bushel had been committed for finding a verdict against full and sufficient evidence, and against the direction of the Court ;

but Vaughan declared this plea to be insufficient, and ordered the discharge of the prisoner. (The country is as much indebted to Bushel, for fighting out this matter, as to Hampden, for resisting ship-money.)

The popular anger, and apprehension, with regard to Romanism, were heightened by the

Duke of York, openly, declaring his conversion to the Romish faith, 1671.

1672 :—

Parliament being in recess, Charles (with the view of relieving the Romanists, only), issued a

Royal Proclamation, suspending the penal laws against Nonconformists, and all recusants whatsoever,—and granting to Dissenters liberty to exercise their religion publicly ; and to Romanists, permission to worship in private houses.

1673 :—

Parliament reassembled, Feb. 4. They at once drew up a **Remonstrance against the Declaration of Indulgence**, as being a stretch of the prerogative.

Charles, thoroughly alarmed, sent for the Declaration, and, himself, broke the seals.

Parliament, however, remained suspicious of him, and still more so of the Duke of York, and, accordingly, (with special aim at the latter), proceeded to pass the

Test Act, (intended to prevent political power falling into the hands of the Papists),—*requiring* all holding any office, or place of trust, civil or military, under the Crown, or admitted of the King's, or the Duke of York's, household, to

1. Take the Oaths of Allegiance, and Supremacy.
2. Receive the Sacrament, according to the rites of the Established Church.

3. Make, and subscribe, a declaration against Transubstantiation.

The penalty for non-compliance was to be fined £500, and to be made incapable of suing in any Court, of being a guardian, and of taking a legacy.

This Act, (as intended), drove York from his command of the Fleet; it occasioned Lord Clifford's disofficing, also, Sir Thomas Osborne, (now made Viscount Latimer), replacing him as *Treasurer*.

The Dissenters had, with noble disinterestedness, supported the Parliament, in their opposition to the Indulgence, because of their dread lest Popery might gain the ascendant, and because they would not recognize the King's right to do away with Acts of Parliament, by proclamation. The Test Act excluded them, equally with Papists, from offices under the Crown; but Parliament had, while the measure was under discussion, promised them a special Bill of Relief from the provisions of the Test. It was, however, not granted, and it was not till the

Repeal of the Test, and Corporation, Acts, 1828, that Non-conformists were freed from civil disabilities.

When they met, in the autumn, the Commons shewed themselves very bad-tempered, and refused supplies. Accordingly,

Parliament was prorogued, Nov. 4, amidst much confusion. The

"Cabal" was now broken up. Shaftesbury was dismissed from his office, going into Opposition, and

Sir Heneage Finch, (afterwards Earl of Nottingham), was made *Lord Chancellor*.

1674:—

Charles, compelled by his needs, assembled the Houses, and the Commons proceeded at once to attack the remaining members of the Cabal, (to whom they attributed the grievances of which they complained).

Great changes now took place in the Ministry.—Buckingham was dismissed, joining Shaftesbury in leading the Opposition; and Latimer, (created

Earl of Danby), became *Prime Minister*.

1675:—

Danby introduced into the Lords a

Bill,—*requiring* all Members of both Houses, and all holding any public office, to

1. Take the Oath of Non-Resistance.

2. Swear that they would not, at any time, attempt to alter the Protestant religion, or the Government, as established in Church and State.

Strenuous opposition was offered to the measure, and, after seventeen days' debate, it passed the Lords, by only two voices.

Parliament was prorogued before the Bill could be debated in the Commons, who, however, previously to their dispersing, had drawn up a

Charge against Danby,—of high crimes and misdemeanours,—which, however, fell through.

1678 :—

In Parliament, there was moved, by Shaftesbury in the Lords, and Russell in the Commons, an

Address to exclude the Duke of York from the presence, and Councils, of the Sovereign: the Duke, however, retired from the Council, and the motion was *withdrawn*.

Under the Popish-Plot-excitement, there was, now, passed the

Papists' Disabling Bill, (or **Catholic Tests Bill**,—or **Parliamentary Test Act**), *enacting* that no Peer, or Member of the Commons, might take his seat, unless he made a declaration, repudiating

1. Transubstantiation.
2. Adoration of the Virgin.
3. The Mass.

In the Lords, York moved that he might be excepted from the provisions of the Bill, declaring that his religion, whatever it might be, should be a matter between God, and himself, alone. His motion was carried by a majority of two only, and so he kept his seat.

(The Papists' Disabling Bill was repealed by the "**Catholic Emancipation Act**," under George IV., up to which time, Romanists were excluded from both Houses.)

The last important act of the "Pension" Parliament was the

Impeachment of Danby,—for high treason, Dec. 21.

1679 :—

To save his Minister, Parliament was dissolved, by Charles, Jan. 24.

Charles soon found himself unable to do without a Parliament, and the writs were issued for a new election.

The result was unpropitious for the King and Danby, and with a view to appease the hostile House, Charles, before their meeting, induced his brother James to retire from the country.

Two days after York's departure, there met

CHARLES'S THIRD, (or Second), PARLIAMENT, MAR. 6. — MAY 27, 1679.

The Commons, at once, proceeded with the

Impeachment of Danby,—passing a resolution that the Impeachment was not affected by the late dissolution, whereupon, Charles informed the House that whatever Danby had done in the way of writing letters, or investigating the alleged Popish Plot, had been by express orders from himself, and that, consequently, the Earl was not responsible, and, also, produced a pardon under the Great Seal, granted to Danby beforehand.

The Commons, however, were firm : they declared, (and this became the law, by the Act of Settlement, 1701), that *no pardon under the Great Seal can be pleaded in bar of an impeachment by the Commons*,—and persisted so obstinately that, finally, the Peers ordered his arrest.

He, thereupon, absconded, but a Bill of Attainder having been passed, surrendered himself, and was committed to the Tower, where he remained till the prorogation.

On Danby's resignation, Charles sent for Sir William Temple, from the Hague, and, by his advice, he dissolved the then-existing Privy Council, and formed a

New Council,—consisting of thirty members, half being chief officers of the Crown,—and the others, men of character, and wealth, not attached to the Court : in this Assembly, all public matters were to be discussed, and the King pledged himself to take no important step without its sanction.

In choosing the members of this Council, riches were made an element of prime importance, the selection being so managed that their total annual income amounted to the prearranged sum of £300,000, (which was about three-fourths of that of the whole House of Commons).

The Council contained, *inter alios*,

The Earl of Essex, (made *Treasurer*, in room of Danby), Lord Russell, and others of the popular party; Shaftesbury, who was made *President of the Council*; The Earl of Sunderland, *Secretary of State*; and Viscount Halifax.

This new body failed to fulfil the high expectations, and hopes, that had been formed concerning it, for, in a short time, the whole power fell into the hands of a junto of four,—Temple, Essex, Sunderland, and Halifax, who constituted a species of Cabinet, “from which all affairs received their first digestion.”

Shaftesbury, (knowing that, though in office, he did not enjoy the King's favor), adhered to the popular party. In the Commons he had unlimited power, and possessed immense influence with the Lords. Thus supported, he re-commenced, as soon as Parliament opened, the attack upon James, originating the

Exclusion Bill, which was now brought in,—providing that

1. James, Duke of York, being a Papist, and in alliance with the Pope to advance the power of France, should be incapable of succeeding to the Throne.

2. When it should become vacant, the Crown should devolve upon the next in succession who had always professed the Protestant religion.

3. If he should ever return to these dominions, the Duke of York should be, thereby, attainted of high treason.

4. Any one corresponding with, advising, or aiding, the Duke of York, should be, thereby, guilty of high treason.

When he saw the temper of the House, Charles offered to consent to certain provisions for hereafter limiting the power of James, if he were allowed to succeed, but the Commons proceeded to read the Bill a second time, whereupon the King, to save his brother, first prorogued

Parliament, May 27, and, a few months after, dissolved it.

On the day of prorogation, Charles gave the Royal Assent to a noble Act, the *Third Great Charter of English liberty*, the

Habeas Corpus Act, (termed, for many years, because he was its chief author, “*Lord Shaftesbury's Act*”), entitled, “*An Act for the Better Securing of the Liberty of*

the Subject, and for Prevention of Imprisonments beyond Seas."

This measure was not the first of its kind : it "only confirmed, and rendered more available, a remedy which had long existed."—"The writ of Habeas Corpus, requiring," (whence its name), "*a return of the body imprisoned, and the cause of his detention, (and, hence, anciently called, "Corpus cum causâ"),* was in familiar use, between subject and subject, in the reign of Henry VI." Under Henry VIII., for the first time, it was employed by a subject against the Crown.

But, though nominally in force, it was frequently evaded by various means, *e.g.*, the Judges declining to grant it,—the jailers refusing to deliver up prisoners on whose behalf a Habeas had been obtained, or removing them to other prisons,—and the Council's sending prisoners out of the country, beyond seas. To provide further securities against these abuses, was now passed *the Habeas Corpus Act*.

Provisions:—

"1. That on complaint, and request, in writing, by, or on behalf of, any person committed, and charged with any crime, (unless committed for treason, or felony, expressed in the warrant ; or as accessory, or on suspicion of being accessory, before the fact, to any petit treason, or felony ; or upon suspicion of such petit treason, or felony, plainly expressed in the warrant ; or, unless he is convicted, or charged in execution, by legal process), the Lord Chancellor, or any of the Judges in vacation, upon viewing a copy of the warrant, (or affidavit, that a copy is denied), shall, (unless the party has neglected for two terms to apply to any court for his enlargement), award a Habeas Corpus for such prisoner, returnable immediately, before himself, or any other of the Judges ; and, upon the return made, shall discharge the party, if bailable, upon giving security to appear, and answer to the accusation, in the proper court of judicature.

"2. That such writs shall be indorsed as granted in pursuance of this Act, and signed by the person awarding them.

"3. That the writ shall be returned, and the prisoner brought up, within a limited time, according to the distance, not exceeding in any case twenty days.

"4. That officers, and keepers, neglecting to make due returns, or not delivering to the prisoner, or his agent, within six hours after demand, a copy of the warrant of commitment, or shifting the custody of the prisoner from one to another, without sufficient reason, or authority, (specified in the Act), shall, for the first offence, forfeit £100, and for the second offence, £200, to the party grieved, and be disabled to hold his office.

"5. That no person once delivered by Habeas Corpus shall be re-committed for the same offence, on penalty of £500.

"6. That every person committed for treason, or felony, shall, if he requires it, the first week of the next term, or the first day of the next session of *Oyer and Terminer*," (i.e., Assize), "be indicted in that term, or session, or else admitted to bail, unless the King's witnesses cannot be produced at that time; and, if acquitted, or not indicted, and tried, in the second term, or session, he shall be discharged from his imprisonment for such imputed offence; but that no person, after the Assizes shall be open for the county in which he is detained, shall be removed by Habeas Corpus till after the Assizes are ended, but shall be left to the justice of the Judges of Assize.

"7. That any such prisoner may move for, and obtain, his Habeas Corpus as well out of the Chancery, or Exchequer, as out of the King's Bench, or Common Pleas; and the Lord Chancellor, or Judges, denying the same, on sight of the warrant, or oath, that the same is refused, shall forfeit, severally, to the party grieved, the sum of £500.

"8. That this writ of Habeas Corpus shall run into the Counties Palatine, Cinque Ports, and other privileged places, and the islands of Jersey, and Guernsey.

"9. That no inhabitant of England, (except persons contracting, or convicts praying, to be transported, or having committed some capital offence in the place to which they are sent), shall be sent prisoner to Scotland, Ireland, Jersey, Guernsey, or any places beyond the seas, within, or without, the King's dominions, on pain that the party committing, his advisers, aiders, and assistants, shall forfeit, to the party aggrieved, a sum not less than £500, to be recovered with treble costs,—shall be disabled to bear any

office of trust or profit,—shall incur the penalties of *Præmunire*,—and shall be incapable of the King's pardon."

In August, Charles, being seized with sudden sickness, recalled, from exile, the Duke of York, who, speedily, became omnipotent at Court, one consequence of which was that Monmouth was deposed from his command in Scotland, and ordered to retire to the Continent.

CHARLES'S FOURTH, (or, Third), **PARLIAMENT, OCT., 1679—JAN. 10, 1681**,—was elected amidst the greatest excitement, each party striving to the utmost to secure a majority, Shaftesbury, especially, exerting himself ardently to rouse the people against the Duke of York.

This agitation, combined with the anger of the people at York's return, turned the elections against the Court, and raised, throughout the country, a loud clamour for the Exclusion Bill.

A date had been appointed for the assembling of

Parliament, but, on that very day, Charles, to avoid meeting the hostile Commons, **prorogued it**,—and, afterwards, by repeated exercise of this device, delayed its meeting for a year.

The day after the prorogation, Shaftesbury was dismissed from the Presidency of the Council, Charles hoping, by this step, to render the Earl less powerful to annoy, and injure. At the same time, Essex retired from office, and went over to the Opposition: Temple quitted politics, for gardening, and Literature: Halifax, and Sunderland, retained office, while the Ministry was recruited by the addition of

Lawrence Hyde, (second son of Clarendon), who succeeded Essex as *Treasurer*, and Sidney Godolphin.

On Shaftesbury's discharge, Russell, Cavendish, and others of the popular party, left the Council, which was, henceforth, virtually, a dead letter.

Shaftesbury's dismissal only made him the more violent against the Court, and the more vigorous in his efforts to excite the anti-Catholic feeling of the nation, and accomplish the ruin of York. Thus, he

1. On the anniversary of Queen Elizabeth's accession, got up, in London, an immense

Anti-Popery Demonstration, Nov. 17,—at which there were present 200,000 persons, marching in procession, bearing images of nuns, priests, cardinals, and the Pope, (which was burnt), amidst the loud acclaims of the multitude.

2. Endeavoured to move the people in favour of the accession of Monmouth, as the only safeguard against France, and the Pope,—while, by his advice, Monmouth himself returned, without his father's leave, to England, and made a progress through many parts of the country, winning, everywhere, admiration, affection, and countenance of his claim: he, also, caused to be spread the story that Charles was legally married to Lucy Walters, and that the marriage contract was in keeping of Sir Gilbert Gerard, in a black box. Gerard declared that he knew nothing of the matter, and Charles publicly denied that he had ever been married to any other woman than the Queen, but the tale was generally believed.

3. Sent agents throughout the country, to induce the people to send petitions to the King, for the speedy assembling of Parliament.

The King issued, in reply, a

Proclamation, threatening punishment to all who should sign petitions contrary to the Law of the land, and his supporters got up

Counter-Petitions, expressing *abhorrence* of the petitioners: thus, the nation became divided into

"**Petitioners**," (or, "**Addressers**"), and "**Abhorers**,"—names which, soon, were replaced by "**Whig**," and "**Tory**."—

"**Whig**" (= "*Whey*"),—was applied, first, in Scotland, by the Royalists, to the Covenanters, in contemptuous allusion to their "vinegar aspect."

"**Tory**," (*Ir. "Toree,"* = "*Give me*"),—was the name given to the Papist bandits, who swarmed in the woods and bogs of Ireland.

1680:—

The Duke of York returning from an absence in Scotland, early in the year, and resuming his potential

position at Court, Shaftesbury, with several distinguished Peers, and gentlemen, appeared in Westminster Hall, and indicted him as a Popish recusant. While, however, they were deliberating on the startling charge, the Jury were dismissed, by the Judges, and James returned North, to be out of the way when Parliament met.

Unable to obtain money from France on favorable conditions, and, yet, needing it greatly, Charles was, at length, compelled to assemble Parliament, Oct. 21.

The King's Speech was of a very mollifying character, but the Commons at once brought in, again, the

Exclusion Bill, which passed the Lower House by a great majority, but in the Upper Chamber, chiefly through the eloquence of Halifax, who led the Opposition, it was thrown out by a considerable majority.

1681 :—

The Commons had, hitherto, voted no supplies, and, when he, now, pressed the matter, they told Charles that no money would he get, till the Duke of York was excluded from the Throne. The King, accordingly, caused

Parliament to be dissolved, Jan. 10.

CHARLES'S FIFTH, (or, Fourth) PARLIAMENT, MAR. 21-28, 1681(!),—the shortest in our annals,—met at loyal Oxford: the leaders of the popular party were accompanied by large bands of their partizans, while the King had his Guards mustered, and the Opposition made as great a display of strength as possible.—“On the whole, the assembly at Oxford rather bore the appearance of a tumultuous Polish diet, than of a regular English parliament.”

The King, (who had just concluded another Pension Treaty with Louis, and, therefore, felt himself tolerably independent), addressed the Houses in a very lofty tone, declaring that, though he would grant every reasonable security for religion, he would not be hectored into the subversion of the Government.

The Commons, nothing daunted, resumed their old themes—Danby's Impeachment, the Enquiry into the Popish Plots, and the Exclusion of York.

On this latter subject, Halifax, (with Charles's consent), brought in a

Regency Bill,—*proposing that*

1. The Duke of York should be banished, for life, 500 miles from England.

2. On Charles's death, York, if then living, should succeed to the *title*, only, of "King,"—and that the regal power should be in the hands of a Regent—the Princess of Orange, first; then, Lady Anne; and, finally, any legitimate son of James, provided he had been brought up in the Protestant faith.

After a debate of two days, the Commons threw the measure out, and, again, the

Exclusion Bill was brought in, whereupon

Parliament was dissolved, Mar. 28.

Charles called no more Parliaments, and, from this time forward, his government was very despotic.

Soon after the dissolution, Charles published a

Proclamation,—*justifying his dismissal of the last two Parliaments*, on the ground that they had rejected reasonable terms. It made a great impression, and a revolution of opinion, aided by the waning of the belief in the Popish Plots, followed. Addresses poured in from all parts of the country, congratulating Charles on his deliverance from his enemies,—and, speedily, he found himself supported by a mighty national party.

The very informers, and spies, who had served Shaftesbury and party so well, actually came over to the King's side, where they were received with open arms, and their perjury taken advantage of, to destroy their former employers.

A striking proof of the altered state of affairs was presented in the

Trial of College, "the Protestant joiner,"—a noted anti-Papist zealot, and a Londoner, who had come down to Oxford, in the retinue of the City Members, and had strutted about, during the sittings of Parliament, armed with sword, and pistols. He was indicted, at the Old Bailey, on a charge of treason, for appearing in arms against the King, and conspiring to seize him, and change the government. The Grand Jury threw the bill out, whereupon, (as the alleged treason had been committed

both in Middlesex and Oxford), he was re-arraigned in the latter city, and, after an infamously unjust trial, was, on the evidence of the villainous Dugdale, Turberville, Haynes, and Smith, (all formerly Papist informers, and whose testimony, on this occasion, was contradicted by Oates, and others), found "Guilty," by a Royalist jury, (the verdict being received by the spectators with loud applause),—condemned,—and *executed*, Aug. 31.

Shaftesbury himself, on a charge of having, (in connection with the Popish Plots), suborned persons to give false testimony against the Queen, the Duke of York, and others, was indicted for high treason, the informers being Turberville, and others of his former tools. Their testimony bore on the surface evidence of its falsehood, but his fate would have been certain with a Royalist jury : the Sheriffs of London, however, (like the City generally), belonged to Shaftesbury's party, and had chosen a *jury* of the same color, who ignored the Bill.

To thoroughly break the power of the "popular party" in the

Corporate Towns, and to control the elections in them, Charles and his Ministers determined that they should be proceeded against by a Writ of "*Quo Warranto*," (i.e. that they should be compelled to give up their Charters, that it might be examined *by what warrant* they exercised the rights and privileges which they claimed), 1682.—London was first taken in hand, and the Judges declared that it had forfeited its Charter, because its magistrates had

1. Exacted a small toll on goods brought to market. (This was for the purpose of rebuilding the market, after the Fire.)

2. In 1679, addressed the King, against the prorogation of Parliament, in, (what the Judges declared to be), a scandalous libel.

The City, by humble petition, regained their Charter, on condition that, henceforth, all the chief corporate officials, from the Mayor downwards, should be appointed subject to the King's approbation.

The fate of London induced numerous boroughs to give up their Charters, voluntarily, to be examined, while the

rest were either proceeded against, by "*Quo Warranto*," or terrified into compliance. In every instance, the old Charters were condemned, and new ones returned so framed as to give the Court absolute power.

In 1682, the Duke of York came to England, and Charles, in defiance of the Test Act, reappointed him Lord High Admiral.

During the remainder of the reign, the King was led by, alternately, his brother, and

Halifax, who was made a Marquis and *Privy Seal*. He was the head of the small body termed "*Trimmers*"—because they "*trimmed*" between the two great parties.

In this reign, the practice of constituencies

Paying Members of Parliament finally ceased, (after having fallen into virtual disuse for a century): the last to be so supported seems to have been Andrew Marvel, Member for Hull.

(The rate of pay had been 4s. for county, and 2s. for borough, members, daily).

STATUTES, (not mentioned elsewhere.)

1. **Poor Law Act, 1661, and 1662,**—*providing* that, 1. Birth, residence, apprenticeship, or forty days' service, in a parish, should constitute a "*settlement*."

2. Justices of the Peace might eject from a parish any new-comer who should not, within forty days, take a house of the yearly value of £10.

2. **Act "for the Better Observance of the Lord's Day, called 'Sunday'," 1677,**—*enacting* that, on the Sabbath, tradesmen, artificers, and laborers, should not engage in their callings, and that no one should cry, or expose for sale, wares, fruits, or merchandise,—on penalty of a fine of 5s. for the first, and forfeiture of goods for the second, offence. *This Act is still in force.*

ECCLESIASTICAL, &c., AFFAIRS.

Primates.—William Juxon; Gilbert Sheldon; William Sancroft.

Charles had, both by the Declaration from Breda, and by his language to a deputation which waited upon him,

in Holland, led the Presbyterian, and Independent, clergy, whom the "Triers" had licensed, to expect that such arrangements would be made that they would be able to retain their position in the Establishment.

Soon after the Restoration, the Puritan leaders again urged the matter upon the King, who told them to draw up a statement of the terms which they would accept. Accordingly, they, shortly, presented to him a long

Petition,—formulating, as follows, their *proposals*,—

1. Regarding the Constitution of the Church.—That there should be adopted Archbishop *Usher's* "*Model of Reduced Episcopacy*,"—which retained bishops, but placed the government of the Church in the hands of Presbyteries, presided over by the bishops: all matters coming before them to be settled by a majority of votes.

Regarding Worship and Ritual.—That

(1.) Instead of the Book of Common Prayer, there should be used a Formulary, (called "*The Reformation of the Liturgy*"), drawn up by Baxter, and in which all matters objected to by the Puritans were omitted.

(2.) There should be abolished

Kneeling at Communion,

Use of the Surplice,

Use of the Sign of the Cross, in Baptism, and

Bowing at the name of Jesus.

(3.) There should be a Conference of Divines, of both parties, to consider the Liturgy question.

The Anglican leaders expressing their readiness for such a meeting, Charles issued a

Proclamation, Octr. 1660,—again promising the Puritans such modifications, and reforms, as should enable them to remain, conscientiously, within the Church's pale,—and granting them liberty to exercise their own views until the proposed Conference could be held. He, however, under the advice of Clarendon, was determined to either bend, or break; the Puritans, and to restore the Church to her former condition and position, a design which was clearly apparent in the

Measures passed in the Convention Parliament for the settlement of the Church,—*vis.*—

1. The restoration of Episcopacy.

2. The replacing in their benefices of all the clergy living who had been ejected under the Commonwealth.

3. The readmission of the Liturgy into the Church.

Preliminaries having been arranged, there met the

Savoy Conference, Ap. 15—July 24, 1661,—consisting of 12 Bishops, and 12 Puritan clergymen, with nine assistant ministers on each side : it was to sit for four months only.

The proposed changes in the constitution of the Church were haughtily rejected by the Bishops.

With regard to Worship, and Ritual, the Assembly had received instructions, from the King, to revise the Book, by comparing it with ancient Liturgies,—without unnecessary alterations, to make such changes as should be expedient for the satisfaction of tender consciences,—and to add any Forms that might seem suitable, couched as nearly as possible in Scripture language.

The Puritans, at the request of the other party, drew up a list of their exceptions to the Prayer-Book, and Rubrics, the result being, virtually, a requisition for “all the distinctive principles of the Church to be sponged out of the Prayer-Book.”

These extensive demands being carefully considered by them, the Episcopal party declared themselves ready to grant some few concessions.

Besides the Paper of Objections, the

Puritans, acting upon the King's permission, *proposed an entirely new Service-Book*, (the one composed by Baxter), to be used by those clergymen who might object to the Prayer-Book.

This proposition caused long, and angry, debate, which lasted till within 10 days of the date fixed for the dissolution of the Conference, and ended in its rejection.

The Proposals, and the Concessions, were then discussed ; but no agreement could be come to, and the

Conference broke up, it being reported to Charles, “That the Church's welfare, that unity, and peace, and his Majesty's satisfaction, were ends upon which they were all agreed ; but, *as to the means, they could not come to any harmony.*”

The King, now, determined that the

Revision should be done by Convocation, who chose a Committee of Bishops, for the work. The

Revised Prayer-Book of Charles II.—was adopted by Convocation, Dec. 20, 1661,—sanctioned by Parliament, Feb. 25, 1662,—and included in the Act of Uniformity, (enforcing its general use), received the royal assent, May, 19th. The

Principal Alterations were :—

Generally :—

1. A new *Preface*, and *Calendar*, were prefixed.
2. All portions of Scripture, in the Services, excepting the *Psalms*, *Ten Commandments*, and parts of the *Communion Service*, were taken from the *Authorised Version*.

In Morning, and Evening, Prayer :—

1. The *Sentences*, *Exhortation*, *Confession*, and *Absolution*, were prefixed to *Evening Prayer*, (which had, hitherto, begun with *The Lord's Prayer*.)

2. Several "*Occasional Prayers*" were added,—e.g.,

A second for *Fair Weather*.

Two for *Ember Week*.

For the *High Court of Parliament*.

"*For all Sorts and Conditions of Men*."

The *General Thanksgiving*.

In the Communion Office :—

1. The last clause, concerning "saints departed this life," was added to the *Prayer for the Church Militant*.

2. The Rubric disclaiming adoration in kneeling was restored to the end of the Service.

In the Baptismal Office.—The question, "Wilt thou keep God's holy will ?" &c., with its answer, was added.

In the Catechism :—"Yes, they do perform them," &c., was changed to, "Because they promise them both," &c.

The following Forms of Service were added :—

1. The "*Office of Baptism for such as are of Riper Years*,"—for the sake of the natives in our plantations, and those at home whose baptism in infancy had been neglected.

2. "*A Form of Prayer, with Fasting*," in commemoration of "*King Charles, the Martyr*," for Jan. 30th,—being the usual Morning, and Evening, Service, with some differences.

3. "*A Form of Prayer, with Thanksgiving,*" in commemoration of the Restoration, for May 29,—being the usual Morning Service, with some differences.

4. *Forms of Prayer to be used at Sea*, (in addition to Morning, and Evening, Prayer.)

This was the **Final Revision of the Prayer Book**.

After Clarendon's fall, the Nonconformists had better times, under the *Cabal*, and, by the influence of Shaftesbury and Buckingham, who were anxious to gain the support of the Dissenters, there was framed a

Bill of Comprehension,—to unite all Protestants in one communion,—to request the King to take measures for uniting his Protestant subjects; it was, however, defeated, by 176 votes to 70. The proposed Comprehension Bill was supported by such men as Tillotson, Stillingfleet, Bates, Manton, and Baxter, and it would have restored 1400 Nonconforming clergymen to the bosom of the Establishment.

The Romanists were, on the whole, treated very mildly, (owing to the secret favour of Charles), until the Popish Plot, and the excitement against the Duke of York.

However, a

Proclamation was issued 1674,—ordering

1. All native-born Englishmen who had become Papist priests to leave the country, in six weeks, under penalty of death.

2. Any British subject attending Mass to be fined one hundred marks, and be imprisoned for a year.

During the fever caused by the alleged Popish Plots, the Papists suffered terribly.

Partly as a natural rebound from the Puritanic rigour of morals under the Commonwealth, and partly from the vicious example of the Court, this reign was characterised by general irreligion and profligacy, against which the Established Church, as *Macaulay* says, "contended feebly and with half a heart. . . . Her attention was elsewhere engaged. Her whole soul was in the work of crushing the Puritans, and of teaching her disciples to give unto Cæsar the things which were Cæsar's." The Statute,

De Hæretico Comburendo, (made 1401), was abolished, 1677.

VARIOUS MATTERS.

Sale of Dunkirk, (with Mardyke), to France, 1662.—Dunkirk had been taken from Spain, 1658, by the French and English, and, according to agreement, given up to the latter.

Charles, being in very great straits for money, Clarendon advised him to sell Dunkirk to Louis.

Negotiations were, accordingly, opened, a bargain was struck, and Dunkirk passed into Louis's hands, for 5,000,000 livres.

The popular rage blazed forth at this act, Clarendon having to bear the brunt of the storm. He was erecting a new, and splendid, mansion: this, the malcontents christened "Dunkirk House," thereby insinuating that he had obtained his building funds from Louis, as a bribe for inducing Charles to give up Dunkirk. There seems no ground for the imputation: his sole motive for promoting the sale appears to have been that he was anxious to extricate the King from his difficulties.

The

Great Plague, in London, 1665.—At the end of 1664, and the beginning of the ensuing year, a few cases of Plague occurred, which, however, caused no alarm, as such visitations were not unusual. But, towards the close of April, the number of deaths in St. Giles's rose to such a figure that the Council thought it necessary to take measures for isolating the pest. It was, however, in vain: there had been fatal delay: London was, at this time, too narrow-streeted, and filthy, (there were no sewers), while the very nature of the disease was unknown, and, therefore, all remedies were ineffectual: the victim was seized, and dead, usually within twenty-four hours, and of those attacked scarcely one recovered.

By the middle of May, the deaths had become so numerous, and the Plague-area so extended, that all who had the means of so doing prepared to quit the terrible scenes, amongst the fugitives being the cowardly King, who took an early opportunity of getting away to Salisbury.

Day by day, the horror grew: everywhere were to be

seen the barred door, and the ghastly red cross painted thereon, with the words, "LORD ! Have mercy upon me."

The streets were grass-grown, and deserted, till night came with the cry, "Bring out your dead !" and the creaking of the dead-carts, which collected, and shot the corpses into huge Plague-pits, outside the walls.

By July, the weekly death-rate averaged 1100, and still it grew.

A delirium of profligacy, and crime, seized upon the evil portion of the community : the wildest orgies were indulged in, and houses were entered, and stripped.

In September, the mortality reached its maximum—11,000 weekly, at which it stood for some time, to fall as rapidly as it had risen, as Winter approached. Shortly, there was not a case left in London, and the emigrants began to return home.

It is calculated that, by this awful visitation, 100,000 persons perished.

Next year occurred the

Great Fire of London, Sep. 2-8, 1666, which commenced in a house in *Pudding Lane*, near London Bridge, and ceased at *Pie Corner*, Smithfield.—The wind being high, the flames rapidly spread, and the houses being built of wood, with no water at command, pursued their career unchecked, for three days, by which time the whole of the City, from the Tower to the Temple, was in blazes.

At first, little heed was paid to the fire, such occurrences being only too common in London,—and, when it began to assume menacing dimensions, the people were too panic-stricken to take measures to stay its progress. In this terrible crisis, Charles, and the Duke of York, displayed the greatest courage and energy, and, by their efforts alone, was London saved from being entirely destroyed. Dividing the City into districts, each under command of a member of the Privy Council, the King, (in accordance with a suggestion made by some sailors), ordered the buildings bordering upon the area of conflagration to be blown up with gunpowder, thus creating a wide gap which the flames failed to leap over: the wind, too, fell on the third day, and thus all fear of the Fire's spreading was allayed.

It continued to rage, however, until the 8th.

●

The destruction wrought was fearful.—An area of 436 acres, (quite two-thirds of London), was covered with the ashes of 89 churches, (including St. Paul's), the Royal Exchange, and other public edifices, with 13,200 dwelling-houses and places of business, 200,000 of whose inhabitants were compelled to lie out in the fields around London.

The total money loss was estimated at over $7\frac{1}{2}$ million, while only eight lives were sacrificed.

The Fire purified the City from the Plague, and swept away the dark, narrow streets and alleys where infection lurked, their place being taken, when the City came to be rebuilt, by wider, and more regular, thoroughfares, and stone houses.

But a grand opportunity was, at this time, lost of making London the most magnificent and commodious city in Europe, for a plan, drawn up by Sir Christopher Wren, which would have secured this result, was set aside.

The report was spread, and accepted, that the Fire was the work of the Papists ; and, when the Monument was set up, in its commemoration, those in authority caused to be inscribed thereon :—

“The burning of this Protestant city was begun, and carried on, by the treachery, and malice, of the Popish faction, in order to the effecting their horrid plot for the extirpating the Protestant religion, and English liberties, and to introduce Popery and heresy.”

Dryden alludes to this inscription :—

“Where *London's Column*, pointing to the skies,
Like a tall bully lifts its head, and *lies*.”

The offensive words were erased 1830.

Colonel Blood's Theft of the Regalia from the Tower, May 9th, 1671.

Blood, a wild, disbanded Parliamentary officer, after an unsuccessful trial to carry off and hang Ormond, made an attempt to steal the Crown, and other regalia, from the Tower, in which he nearly succeeded : he had wounded, and bound, Edwards, the Keeper of the Jewel-office, and got outside the Tower with the spoil, when he was pursued, and captured, with some of his companions.

Charles, to gratify his curiosity, had an interview with him, at which the Captain declared that he had conspired with others to kill the King, and had, for that purpose,

hidden himself, armed with a carbine, in the river-side reeds, above Battersea, (where Charles often bathed), but that such "an awe of majesty" seized upon him that he abandoned his purpose, and induced his confederates to do the same,—and intimated that if he were executed, his associates would avenge his death.

Charles, perhaps from a kind of admiration for his reckless disposition, not only pardoned him, but gave him an estate in Ireland, worth £500 a-year.

Bombay and Tangiers acquired, 1662, as part of Catherine's dowry, and Bombay made over to the E. I. Company. Tangiers was given up, 1683.

Turnpikes are supposed to have been established in England, in 1663.

Royal Exchange rebuilt, 1667. A

Great Frost of 9 weeks occurred during the winter of 1683-4, the Thames being covered with ice so thick that a fair was held on it.

INVENTIONS, DISCOVERIES, &c.

Theatres were re-opened, and *actresses* were introduced upon the stage.

Royal Society founded, 1660.—Its establishment gave a powerful impetus to scientific studies.

Rock-Salt discovered at Nantwich, 1670.—Hitherto salt had been imported, or procured by evaporation.

The Steam Engine virtually invented, 1683, by the Marquis of Worcester, who then first showed that steam could be employed as a motive force.

New Gold and Silver Coinage struck at the Restoration, and **Copper Coinage** introduced. Guineas were first coined, 1663:

Tea and Coffee came into more general use after the Restoration. They were, at first, sold in a liquid state, and in 1680 a duty of 8d. per gallon for tea, and 4d. for coffee, was imposed.

Chelsea Hospital and **Greenwich Observatory** founded.

Coal used for fuel in the places where it was mined, and, towards the end of the reign, in London.

Flag-signalling invented by the Duke of York.

A Penny-Post, for letters, was established, in London, by Murray, an upholsterer, 1661, and a Postmaster-General appointed : and later on, another Penny-Post, for letters and parcels, was set up, by William Dockwray, 1680.

COMMERCE, AND COLONIZATION.

The Commerce of England vastly increased, especially after, by the final peace with Holland, she became mistress of the sea.

London was the chief port : then came Bristol, and then Hull. A second

Navigation Act, 1660, enacted that

1. No goods should be brought from the Colonies in any but British ships.

2. No foreign goods should be imported, in English ships, from any other place but that where they had been produced.

A new

Charter was granted to the East India Company, 1661. A

Charter was granted to the Hudson's Bay Company, 1670,—for trading in minerals and furs. The

Colonization of America went steadily and rapidly on, in New York and the Jerseys, the new settlements of Carolina, and

Pennsylvania, (founded 1682).—In consideration of Penn's father's distinguished services, and in lieu of money due to him, Charles II. granted William Penn, and heirs, the province.

The Constitution of the State, drawn up by Penn and Algernon Sidney, was republican, and the laws just and merciful.

In settling the Colony, Penn did not, as had been the previous practice, ignore the Indians, the rightful owners of the soil, but met them amicably, and made just arrangements with them.

In 1683, he founded Philadelphia, making it a model city.

SCOTCH AFFAIRS.

The settlement of affairs here was accomplished much more speedily than in England, owing to the sweeping measures of the

DRUNKEN PARLIAMENT, 1661,—which consisted almost entirely of Royalists, and seemed bent on depriving the country of its liberties. They

1. Restored the Lords of Articles.
2. Voted to Charles, unconditionally, the widest, and fullest, prerogatives of sovereignty.

3. Passed the
"Rescissory Act,"—by which all the proceedings of Parliament, for the preceding twenty-eight years, were annulled.

The Declaration of Breda had not promised to Scotland a like indemnity to that held out to England. Advantage was, accordingly, taken of this to destroy the

Marquis of Argyle.—The unsuspecting nobleman, having hastened up to London, to pay his court to the restored King, was seized, and sent back to Scotland, to be tried for high treason: he was condemned for having complied with the Commonwealth, and executed, within forty-eight hours, **May 27, 1661**.

Episcopacy was now fully restored. The Presbyterians, however, would not enter the churches, but held services by stealth amongst the hills and moors.

To punish them, a body of dragoons, under Sir James Turner, was sent to live at free quarters upon the people in the West, and to prevent private religious meetings, or punish those found at any such assemblies.

The people rose, capturing Turner, and marched, 1,100 strong, to Edinburgh. Here, however, they found the gates closed against them, which compelled their retreat, while effecting which, they were attacked by a superior force, and brought to *battle* on the

Pentland Hills, Nov. 28, 1666.—*Royalists victorious.*

Royalist com.—General Dalsiel.

Covenanters' com.—Colonel Wallace.

The Covenanters were dispersed, with the loss of about 40 slain, while a number were taken prisoners, 20 of whom were executed.

After the fall of Clarendon, a gentler policy was, for a time, pursued towards the Presbyterians, there being issued an

Act of Indulgence,—permitting the ejected ministers to return to their pulpits, if not yet filled, or to others which would be allotted to them, if they would conform to the new government, in Church and State. Nearly all the deprived clergy, however, refused to accept this "**Black Indulgence**," while the people continued to meet in secret, as before, for worship.

Lauderdale was now placed at the head of affairs in Scotland, as **Lord Commissioner**, and ruled with a rod of iron. It was made seditious to assemble for worship, and the Presbyterian preachers were subjected to loss of property and death.

About 1679, Charles and the Duke of York were very anxious to so increase the Army as to be able to overawe, or repress, the popular discontent in England, and, to gain a pretext for this augmentation, it was determined to take steps to drive the Scots into rebellion. Accordingly, there were issued

"**Bonds of Peace**,"—which required the Western lairds to swear that neither themselves, their families, their servants, their tenants, nor their tenants' servants, should allow religious meetings in any place but the churches of the Establishment, or associate with any who had been convicted of such offences. The landlords refused to thus pledge themselves, whereupon the district was declared to be in revolt, and 6,000 Highlanders were quartered upon the defenceless people, who were mercilessly robbed, insulted, and outraged, by their unbidden guests. Strong representations were made to the King, by the sufferers and the nation generally, and he thought it prudent to withdraw the interlopers, who, however, were succeeded, very shortly, by 5,000 fresh troops.

Murder of the Archbishop of St. Andrew's, May 3, 1679.—Sharpe, one of the Presbyterian leaders, had been sent to London to represent the interests of his party, but, to their disgust, had been won over by Charles, by the

bribe of the Primacy of St. Andrew's. Carmichael, Sharpe's Commissioner, had rendered himself peculiarly detested on account of his stern treatment of the "conventicle"-goers, and a band of them determined upon his death, and lay in wait for him, on Magus Moor, (near St. Andrew's.) It so happened, however, that instead of the expected prey, there came into view the Archbishop, himself, in his carriage : professing to regard this as a Providentially-ordered opportunity, they brutally murdered him, and fled to the West.

The Government seized upon this act as a pretext for further severities, and, accordingly, it was made treason for the Covenanters to assemble for worship.

The Covenanters met these new measures by coming together in larger numbers, and bearing arms. On one of these occasions, a large congregation was surprised, and attacked by a body of Royalist dragoons, under Graham of Claverhouse : the Covenanters bravely resisted, and there ensued a sharp, fierce, *battle, at*

Drumclog, (near Loudon Hill), June 1, 1679.—Covenanters victorious.

The insurgents, feeling that they had gone too far for retreat, boldly pushed into, and *took possession of, Glasgow.*

The Duke of Monmouth was despatched to put down the insurgents, and encountered them, 8,000 strong, in *battle, at*

Bothwell Bridge, (near Hamilton, Lanark), June 22, 1679.—Royalists victorious.

R. com.—Duke of Monmouth.

C. com.—Hackston, of Rathillet.

The Covenanters held the bridge, with obstinate courage, until their ammunition failed, whereupon Monmouth, charging fiercely, completely routed them. 1,200 surrendered, several of them being executed,—300 were sent out, as slaves, to Barbadoes,—and the rest gave "Bonds of Conformity," and were released.

This same year, on Monmouth's being deprived of his command, the

Duke of York was appointed Lord High Commissioner, in Scotland, and showed himself a bitter perse-

cutor,—being present at, and aiding in, the torture of the accused Covenanters.

The Duke of York, now, held a

Parliament, 1681,—and procured the passing of the **Test**,—*including*

1. A promise to adhere to the *true* Protestant religion.
2. An acknowledgment of the King's civil, and ecclesiastical, supremacy, and oath of non-resistance.
3. A rejection of all condemned doctrines, and practices.
4. A declaration that there "lay no obligation from the National Covenant, or the Solemn League and Covenant, or any other manner of way whatever, to endeavour any alteration in the Government, in Church, or State, as it was then established."

Many in office refused to assent to the Test, and were, accordingly, ejected, while the Earl of Argyle, for declaring, when swearing to it, that he did not, thereby, bind himself against endeavouring, in a lawful way, any alterations in Church, and State, was accused of high treason, and condemned to death. He, however, escaped, his estates being confiscated.

IRISH AFFAIRS.

After the Restoration, two important matters called for attention :—

1. **The Settlement of Religion.**—Episcopacy was reëstablished, and power given to the Bishops to recover the property taken from the Church, under the Commonwealth.

2. **The Settlement of Estates.**—Cromwell had confiscated the lands of Royalists, and bestowed a large part of them on his soldiers, and on the Protestant settlers, while the rest remained unappropriated.

After the resignation of Richard Cromwell, a Council of Officers assumed the control of affairs, in Ireland. They appointed a

Convention,—composed of representatives from the Protestant estate-holders : these, at the Restoration, proffered Charles the national submission, and prayed him to call a Protestant Parliament to settle estates, in accordance with his Proclamation of 1660, by which those

Royalists who had remained loyal to his father, and himself, were to be restored to their lands,—and those to whom Cromwell had granted estates were to retain them, or receive compensation, for giving them up.

On examination, it was found that Charles had bestowed such extensive tracts on the Duke of York, and others, that the remainder went but a very little way towards satisfying claimants. In this dilemma, the holders of lands granted by Cromwell agreed to give up one-third of their estates, to swell the so-called

“Fund of Reprisals,”—out of which the Royalists were to be recouped. But, even then, the supply fell short of the demand, and, while the Protestant Royalists’ claims were satisfied, over 3,000 Roman Catholics, who had been deprived by Cromwell, and who protested their undeviating loyalty, received no compensation whatever.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS.

France.	Germany.	Spain.
LOUIS XIV.	LEOPOLD I.	PHILIP IV. CHARLES II.

Popes.

ALEXANDER VII.	CLEMENT X.
CLEMENT IX.	INNOCENT XI.

JAMES II.

Dates.—At St. James’s Palace, London, (or, some say, in Edinburgh Castle), October 15, 1633; Feb. 6, (crowned Ap. 23), 1685-1688; died Sept. 6, 1701, at St. Germain, of apoplexy: being seized with paralysis, he had gone to the baths, at Bourbon, whence, having received much benefit, he returned home, only to meet his death: his remains were kept, embalmed, in the Church of the English Benedictines, at Paris, till 1793, and it was not till 1824 that they were interred at St. Germain. George IV. erected over them a marble monument, whose inscription characterizes the dead monarch as “*Magnus in prosperis, in adversis major.*”

Shortly before dying, he said to his son that “however splendid a crown appears, the time is sure to come when

greater regard than Charles had shewn for the country's honor, and his own dignity, (not submitting to become a pensioner of France to the same extent as his brother): punctual, and diligent, (in the dull, plodding, manner of such characters), in public business: stern, and severe, in administering justice.

Cold and phlegmatic; perverse, prejudiced, and with the pig-headed stubbornness of a little mind; a deadly, inflexible, but, generally, open enemy, indulging however, at times, in contemptible petty spite; parsimonious.

In private life, a far better man than Charles had been: though not a faithful, was a kind, and tender, husband, and his amours were not of the same shameless character as, while his Court was infinitely more decent and decorous than, his predecessor's; faithful in his friendships, (unless thwarted in his pet schemes).

In religion sincere, and punctilious—a narrow-minded, inexorable, bigot: had he reigned at the time of the Reformation, there seems little reason to doubt that he would have out-done Mary herself as a persecutor.

REBELLION.

MONMOUTH'S REBELLION, 1685.

Purpose.—*To dethrone James.* The Duke of Monmouth, when banished by his father, had taken up his abode in Holland, being well received by the Prince of Orange, who, however, on James's accession, dismissed the refugee and his followers, they returning to Brussels.

When the Scotch expedition was decided upon, Argyle, and the other conspirators, came to the opinion that it was essential to success that a rising should be effected, simultaneously, in England, and, of course, Monmouth was selected as the leader of the proposed expedition for that purpose. He, however, was not at all sanguine about the result, and was, with great difficulty, induced to consent.

Accompanied by Fletcher, and Ferguson, Monmouth sailed, (Argyle having preceded him), with three ships, carrying 80 men and some servants, and landed at Lyme, June 11, immediately setting his standard up in the market-place, and issuing a

Proclamation, declaring that

“He, and his followers, had taken up arms “for the

defence, and vindication, of the Protestant religion, and the laws, rights, and privileges, of England."

2. "The Duke of York," (as he was rudely denominated), was a traitor, tyrant, murderer, and Popish usurper,—that he had caused the Great Fire, and the death of Godfrey, and of Essex; poisoned Charles; and been author of other heinous offences.

3. Monmouth was the legitimate son of Charles II., and, consequently, rightful sovereign, but that, for the present, he would not make any such claim, but would leave the whole question of the future government of the country to be submitted to Parliament.

4. Parliaments should be held annually.

5. There should be no standing army, without consent of Parliament.

6. The cities, and towns, should have back their original Charters, (of which Charles had deprived them.)

7. There should be complete religious toleration.

The Duke's forces, thanks to his great popularity, rapidly increased, and, four days after landing, he had at his command 3,000 men, all, however, of the lower orders, no one of any position joining him. Thus reinforced, he passed on to Axminster, where the Duke of Albemarle arrived next day, with 4,000 militia, but retreated, when he saw the rebels.

Monmouth proceeded, next, June 20, to Taunton, where there being a strong, and general, atmosphere of Puritanism, he was heartily welcomed, twenty young ladies of rank, and position, presenting him with a pair of colors, of their own working, and a Bible. Here he, with a view to winning aristocratic support, had himself, (in violation of his manifesto), **proclaimed King.**

On the 22nd., Bridgewater was reached, and found as friendly as Taunton, volunteers flocking in, to join the insurgents, in such numbers that the Duke might have doubled his army, but, as he was short of arms, he was compelled to send them away. Having better organised his force, Monmouth, now, went on to Keynsham, with the purpose of seizing Bristol, but was delayed by the partial breaking down of a bridge. Meanwhile, effective measures were being taken to crush the rebellion, and large bodies of militia were hemming him in. Finding

the Royal forces near, he retreated to Bridgewater, having on the way a *skirmish*, with some regular troops, at

Philip's Norton. June 27.—*Indecisive*, and, two days later, reaching Frome, (where he heard of the failure of Argyle's attempt).

Meanwhile, the Royal troops approached, and encamped, July 5, on the plain of Sedgemoor, about three miles from Bridgewater: but Feversham's disposition of his troops was so careless that the Duke determined to attempt a night attack, which issued in the *battle of*

Sedgemoor, July 6, (*the last battle fought on English ground*).—*Royalists victorious.*

R. coms.—Earl of Feversham; Colonel Kirke.

I. coms.—Duke of Monmouth; Earl Grey.

In making for the enemy's position, the insurgents were suddenly brought to a pause, by one of those "dykes" characteristic of Somersetshire, while, at the same time, the accidental discharge of a pistol aroused the Royalists, and brought them to the spot. Lord Grey, commanding the cavalry, showed the greatest cowardice, and incapacity, and, consequently, his troops were soon routed, and in flight: the infantry, however, spite of their want of discipline, and inadequate arms, fought with consummate bravery, but at last gave way, 1,000 of them falling, while many hundreds were taken. Feversham hunted down the fugitives, hanging 20, without trial. He was, however, mercy itself, compared with

Colonel Kirke, and his "Lambs." On entering Bridgewater, he hanged 19 persons, without enquiry, and, day after day, made the gibbet groan with fresh victims. His soldiers, let loose, to live at free quarters, committed the most fearful outrages, and their name was a word of terror in the West for many a long year.

Meanwhile, Monmouth had attempted to gain the coast, but, after two days' wandering, was captured, July 8, at the bottom of a ditch, covered with fern, and in peasant's clothes.

A Bill of Attainder having been passed, immediately upon his landing, the Duke's life was forfeit, but he clung to the hope that surely his uncle would pardon him. Accordingly, he despatched a letter to the King, declaring that he had been seduced by others into rebelling, and

begging for an interview, that he might communicate State secrets of great importance.

James, without any intention of pardoning him, granted the interview, in the hope that

Monmouth would betray his accomplices : this, however, he refused to do,—nothing came of the interview,—he was left to his fate,—and **executed**, on Tower Hill, July 15.

The suppression of the rebellion was followed by the "**Bloody Assize**." The judges appointed to hold it were the fiendish Jeffreys, and four others.

The Commission opened at Winchester, where occurred the most disgraceful, and pitiful, incident of the Assize, *viz.*, the trial of a venerable woman of seventy, named

Lady Alice Lisle, widow of John Lisle, (one of Cromwell's lords), who was charged with treasonably sheltering two fugitive insurgents, after the battle of Sedgemoor. It was clear, from the evidence, that she was ignorant of their being rebels, while on no plea whatever ought she to have been condemned, until the men themselves had been tried, (and this had not been done),—yet, the brutal Jeffreys, by bullying witnesses, and brow-beating the Jury, secured a verdict against her, and *sentenced* her to be burnt, at the stake, the same afternoon ! The Cathedral clergy, however, were so horrified that they brought pressure to bear upon the Judge, and induced him to alter his judgment to one of beheading.

Two other persons of position,

Mrs. Gaunt, and Alderman Cornish,—were condemned, with the same cruel injustice, and *executed*. (The convictions of Lady Lisle and Cornish were, however, reversed, after the Revolution.)

In Somersetshire, 233 were executed,—in Dorsetshire, 74,—and in Devonshire, 13 ; besides these, large numbers were severely whipped, or committed for long terms of imprisonment, or ruined by heavy fines, while 1,000 were shipped off to the plantations !

Jeffreys boasted that he had destroyed more, for high treason, than all the Judges since the Conquest. Only those escaped punishment who could afford to bribe this monster.

On his return to London, Jeffreys was welcomed by James, and rewarded with the Lord Chancellorship.

PARLIAMENTARY AND POLITICAL AFFAIRS.

This period is scarcely anything else but an uninterrupted record of tyrannical and unconstitutional acts, on the part of the King.

James declared to the Council, on the day of Charles's death, that he was determined to govern constitutionally in Church and State,—and that, while he should uphold the lawful prerogatives of the Crown, he would violate no man's rights or property.

This announcement gave general satisfaction, and high hopes were entertained of a harmonious and prosperous reign.

But the king soon showed that these professions were hollow, and that he was as arbitrarily inclined as any one of the Stuarts, besides being set upon Romanizing the country.

His first unconstitutional act was to issue, before Parliament assembled,

A Proclamation, demanding the continuance of the payment of those customs which had been granted to Charles 'only during his life, and to which James had no right, until voted, as was usual, by the first Parliament of the reign. Next,

He openly attended Mass, (an illegal service), soon after his accession, encouraged Papists at Court, (threatening the Bishops with withdrawal of his protection, because the clergy, in alarm, everywhere denounced Popery), and, for their sake, issued, still before Parliament met,

A Proclamation, releasing all who were in prison for refusing to take the oaths of allegiance and supremacy. James professed that he meant this as a measure of toleration for all sects : but, as all the Dissenters in prison, save the Roman Catholics and Quakers, were there for offences against the *Conventicle* and *Five Mile Acts*, and not for refusing the oaths of allegiance and supremacy, it was clear to every one that the proclamation was intended for the special benefit of the Papists.

At the Coronation, the Communion was omitted !

James allowed the chief offices of the Crown to remain

in the hands of Protestants: Rochester was *Lord High Treasurer*; Sunderland, *Secretary of State*; and Halifax, *President of the Council*.

At the same time, the King formed a secret Council of Papists, and continued relations with the French King, and, on the representation that he intended to restore Romanism, obtained a grant of £60,000.

On the assembling of

PARLIAMENT, MAY 19--NOV. 20, 1685, (*the only one during the reign*), it was found that the Lower Chamber, (in consequence of the changes in the Corporations made by Charles II.), was constituted, almost entirely, of Tory Churchmen, all of them, of course, intensely loyal, there being, according to his computation, only about forty members hostile to James; but his persistent efforts to abolish the penal laws against Papists, and to make the Romish faith supreme, quickly changed a devoted House, that would have allowed him almost any stretch of prerogative in State affairs, had he only respected the Established Church, into bitter opponents.

In his opening speech, the King intimated that he had the means, in his prerogative, of raising what supplies he needed, without the assent of Parliament, and that, should they dissatisfy him, he would disregard them, and govern by the power inherent in him, by virtue of his "Divine right."

The Commons proceeded to the

Settlement of the revenue,—voting James, for life, besides the annual amount enjoyed, at his death, by the late King, the proceeds of a number of fresh duties,—thereby raising the income to £1,900,000. They, then, (feeling already somewhat anxious at the symptoms manifested of a design to restore Papacy), *passed* two

Resolutions.—1. Declaring their profound attachment to the Protestant religion.

2. Calling upon the King to put in force the penal laws against all Dissenters.

The Royal anger at this was so great, that the Commons reversed the resolutions, expressing their full confidence in James's promise of protection to the Church.

The crushing of Monmouth's rebellion greatly strengthened the Government, and James threw off all disguise, and set to work to remove, from the Constitution, whatever stood in the way of his restoring Romanism, and exercising his vaunted prerogative.—The first three steps which he, (rightly), considered essential, and determined on, in carrying out his design, were the repeal of the Habeas Corpus Act, the repeal of the Test Act, and the establishment of a large standing army.

Halifax refused to consent to the repeal of the Acts, and James, (Octr.), accordingly **dismissed** him, and so drove "the most eloquent and accomplished statesman of the age into Opposition."

Parliament reësssembled, Novr. 9, and James announced that he

1. *Had allowed Roman Catholics to serve in the Army, during the Rebellion, without their acceptance of the Oath required by the Test Act,—and that he would not, now, discharge them, as such a step would disgrace them, and deprive him of their aid, should further risings occur.*

2. *Intended to maintain a Standing Army.*

The Commons, roused to determined hostility, negatived this proposition, and presented an

Address,—declaring that the King could not allow any one to hold office in the Army who had not subscribed to the Test Act,—and begging him to allay the people's anxieties, by retracing the illegal steps he had taken in the matter.

The Lords also began to earnestly discuss his proceedings.

James, in fulfilment of his threat, caused

Parliament to be prorogued (Novr. 20), and, afterwards, **dissolved**, (July 2, 1687).

The Church, (hitherto the firmest support of Monarchy), and the nation generally, were greatly excited and incensed by the King's policy, and their horror at the possibility of Romanism being reëstablished, was wrought to a higher, and dangerous, pitch, by the terrible stories of Papist persecution, narrated by the French refugees, who fled to England upon the

Revocation, (Oct. 12, 1685), of the "Edict of

Nantes," (granted by Henry IV. to secure toleration for the French Protestants).

James, however, obstinately bent upon his end, marched on, steadily, to his doom.

Clarendon, Rochester, and other Protestant Ministers, in vain urged moderation upon him: he turned a deaf ear, and gave his sole confidence to Romanists, chief amongst whom was

Sunderland,—(who, however, did not publicly own his perversion from Protestantism till 1687), who replaced Halifax as *President of the Council*.

The arbitrary, and unconstitutional, measures which James, successively, adopted, after the dismissal of the Houses, follow in the order in which they occurred.

He obtained an

Opinion of a majority of the Judges in favor of his Dispensing Power,—i.e., his power to dispense with subscription to the Act of Uniformity and the Test Act.

This end was accomplished by a collusive, sham, prosecution. By James's instructions, the servant of Sir Edward Hales, (a recent proselyte to Romanism), prosecuted his master, to recover £500 penalty, for holding a commission in the Army, without having complied with the requirements of the Test Act. Previous to the case coming on, James sounded all the Judges, and finding four of them opposed to his wishes, dismissed them, and put in their places lawyers devoted to his interests. On the trial, Sir Edward produced the King's Letters Patent, dispensing with subscription in his case,—eleven of the Judges, out of twelve, decided in his favor,—and Chief-Justice Herbert laid it down that it was an inseparable prerogative of the Crown to dispense with penal laws, in particular cases, for reasons of which it was the sole judge, **June, 1686.**

James took immediate advantage of the decision, to

Introduce into the Privy Council four Romanist Lords.

Dispensations were, now, granted to **Members of the Colleges at Oxford**, "to absent themselves from Church,—not to take the Oaths of Allegiance, and Supremacy,—or to do any other thing to which, by the laws and statutes of the Realm, or those of the College, they were obliged." An

Ecclesiastical Commission Court was established, **July 14, 1686**,—on the model of that under Elizabeth, (abolished by the Long Parliament).

Various energetic measures were now adopted to promote Popery,—thus,—

1. **St. James's** was thrown open for Papist worship, and numbers of other Romish churches rapidly sprang up in London,—troops of monks and nuns appeared, and convents and monasteries sprang up in large numbers.

2. **Priests** were introduced into the Army.

3. Nearly all public officials who refused to apostatize from Protestantism were gradually got rid of: amongst others, **Rochester**, even, (though James's brother-in-law, and a most faithful minister and friend), was *dismissed*.

A few of the King's most unprincipled tools, (including **Jeffreys** and **Kirke**), though utterly destitute of religion and moral principle, adhered, (strange to tell), to the Reformed Faith,—but they were indispensable to, and not replaceable by, James, who therefore retained them in his service.

Previous to **Rochester's** dismissal, the King had commenced his attacks on the Universities, by the

Appointment of a Papist to the Deanery of Christ Church, (Oxford), Decr. 1686,—only members of the Established Church being legally eligible for the post.

James had, also, formed a **Camp**, on **Hounslow Heath**, and assembled there, for the purpose of overawing the Londoners, 13,000 men. Riots now took place in various parts of the City, excited by the appearance in the streets of so many monks, and the flocking of large crowds to the Papist chapels.

A blow was next struck at Cambridge: a

Royal Letter, addressed to Vice-Chancellor **Pechell**, ordered the **Senate** to confer the degree of **M.A.** on a **Benedictine Monk**, named **Alban Francis**, without the prescribed oaths, **Feb. 7, 1687**.—This they declined to do, and sent the King a respectful Petition, stating the reasons for their non-compliance. Thereupon,

Dr. Pechell was cited before the Commission, *May 7*,—*deprived* of his Vice-Chancellorship,—and *suspended from receiving his revenue*, as Master of **Magdalen**.

Meanwhile, James had taken the daring step of issuing a **Declaration of Indulgence, Ap. 4, 1687**,—wherein, by his arrogated Dispensing Power, he

1. Suspended the operation of all penal laws against Romanists, and other Dissenters.

2. Granted permission to all sects to worship openly, "without let or hindrance."

3. Forbade the imposition of religious oaths, or tests, as qualifications for office.

This Declaration deceived but few ; it was generally, and correctly, believed that his real purpose was, while freeing the Papists, to attach the numerous, and powerful, Nonconformist body to himself.

But the majority of the Dissenters utterly refused to accept this tempting Indulgence, and preferred to continue to suffer the disabilities, and indignities, under which they groaned, rather than endanger civil liberty, and the Protestant religion, by assenting, while their ablest leaders, (*e.g.*, Baxter and Howe), openly declared their opinion of this monstrous exercise of James's assumed prerogative.

The Church of England, itself, was thoroughly awakened by this Indulgence, and by that which had been published in Scotland.

Oxford was now attacked.—The Mastership of Magdalen College becoming, by death, vacant, (in March), it became necessary to appoint a successor, who, according to the College statutes, must be a Fellow of either Magdalen, or New, College, and must be elected by the other Fellows. James, in a

Royal Letter, ordered the election, as President of Magdalen, of Anthony Farmer, a Papist, (by perversion), and grossly immoral.—The Fellows sent up a Petition, begging for either a free election, or another, and fit, nominee, and, receiving no reply, proceeded to elect Dr. Hough, "a man of eminent virtue and prudence."

The Fellows were, now, summoned before the Court of Commission, and their election of Hough declared void. At the same time, such overwhelming evidence of his immoral character was adduced, before the Court, that all idea of insisting on Farmer's election was abandoned,—but *another letter* was despatched, ordering the election of Parker, Bishop of Oxford, a cringing time-server, and a

Jesuit in disguise. The Fellows replied that Hough was in possession, and that, were it not so, Parker, not being a Fellow of Magdalen, or of New, was not eligible.

James, next, attempted to wheedle them into compliance, through the mediatorship of William Penn, and, this failing, tried, in person, threats, and intimidation—in vain!—the Fellows remaining firm. Finally, recourse was, again, had to the Court of Commission,—which declared Hough an intruder, and appointed Parker,—while Hough, and all the Fellows, excepting two, (who had been willing to yield), were expelled, and declared incapable of holding any ecclesiastical office!

This was, perhaps, the most illegal, and arbitrary, of all James's acts of violence: "it not only attacked private property, but poisoned the very fountains of the Church," whose recently-aroused hostility it also greatly augmented.—The clergy "no longer insisted," (as they so slavishly had done, earlier in the reign), "on the doctrine of passive obedience, when its safety, and even existence, were thus endangered."

(When, in 1688, his affairs grew desperate, and he, too late, attempted to undo the mischief he had wrought, James commissioned the Bishop of Winchester to settle the matter of the Presidency of Magdalen, according to statute: as the result, Hough and the Fellows were restored.) The Papal

Nuncio, Francisco d'Adda, was publicly received, at Windsor, by the King, July 3, 1687,—“an overt act of treason in all who were parties to it.”

Four Romish Bishops, too, were openly consecrated, in the Royal Chapel.

The reception of the Nuncio so disgusted the few remaining Protestant officials, that they resigned: thenceforth, the entire government was in the hands of bigoted Papists.

James seems, at this period, to have been entirely blind to the signs of the rising storm, (which, however, were, to others, many and clear),—and to have complacently regarded his triumph as assured, and all-but-completed.

One thing only was wanting—an obsequious Parliament, to ratify, (as merely a matter of legal form), his acts.

Accordingly, he determined to pack a House, and having dissolved the long-prorogued Parliament, appointed a

Board of Regulators,—professedly to reform abuses in the Corporations, but really to take measures for ensuring a docile majority.—The method adopted was, to remodel the Charters, so as to throw the franchise into the hands of the Papists, and the other Dissenters.

But, after all his pains, he was disappointed, for the Dissenting electors were easily induced to promise the Church party, (on the latter pledging themselves that, when the opportunity should come, they would bring in a scheme of Toleration, and Comprehension), that they would oppose the repeal of the Test Act, and all measures calculated to injure Protestantism and restore Popery.

Consequently, there was no hope for James of a majority, should he call a Parliament, and, therefore, he abstained from doing so.

In the late summer of 1687, it was announced that the Queen was likely to become a mother, and the Romanists, (strange to say !) declared that the child would be a son ! The Protestant part of the community had their suspicions excited, that it was intended to palm off, upon the nation, a supposititious heir.

The bitter feeling against the King was greatly intensified, and the last drop needed to fill the cup of popular indignation against him was added, in a few months, in the

Re-issue of the Declaration of Indulgence, Ap. 27, 1688,—in substance the same as the previous one, but contained, in addition, a declaration that James was immutably determined in his purpose.

A few days after, a crowning outrage, (which cut the last feeble link between it and the King, and roused it to open revolt), was offered to the Church, by an

Order in Council, May 4,—commanding all the **Clergy to read the Declaration of Indulgence, to their respective Congregations, after Divine service, on Sunday, May 20**.—The excitement in the Church was great, and nearly all the London, and most of the country, clergy, determined not to comply.

Seven Prelates,—**Sanercroft**, the Primate ; **Ken**, of Bath

and Wells ; Lloyd, of St. Asaph ; Turner, of Ely ; Lake, of Chichester ; White, of Peterborough ; and Trelawney, of Bristol,—anxious to prevent matters from proceeding to a rupture with James, met, with a number of clergymen, like-minded, at Lambeth Palace, May 18, and drew up a most respectful

Petition,—in which, (after disclaiming all intention of disloyalty and intolerance), they prayed the King to *excuse them from reading the Indulgence*, on the ground that it was an illegal document, since Parliament had declared that the Sovereign could not dispense with ecclesiastical statutes, by his prerogative. All the seven prelates signed it.

It wanted, now, only about thirty-six hours to the eventful Sunday, and as no time was to be lost, six of the Bishops, (Sancroft was in disgrace, and could not go to Court), proceeded to Whitehall, and, being admitted to an interview with him, (Sunderland being the only other person present), presented the document to the King, who having read it, with evident signs of anger, exclaimed, "This is a great surprise to me. I did not expect this from your Church, especially from some of you. This is a standard of rebellion."

The Bishops earnestly asserted their loyalty, but declared that they had, and must perform, their duty to God, as well as to him.

He then bade them "be-gone" ! and obey his orders, under pain of his severest displeasure, ending by declaring, "God has given me this Dispensing Power, and I will maintain it. I tell you there are still seven thousand of your Church that have not bowed the knee to Baal."

When Sunday arrived, only

Four London, and about *two hundred country, clergy*, (out of a total of 10,000), read the *Declaration*.

James was furious at this open defiance, and, in spite of his Council advising moderation, determined to proceed against the seven prelates.

Accordingly, they were cited, and appeared, June 8, before the Council.—They acknowledged having signed and presented the document, and were then informed that they would be prosecuted for misdemeanour, in presenting a libel to the King, and were required to give bail for their appearance, at the King's Bench, to be tried : refusing

to comply, on the ground that Peers are not required to enter into recognizances in charges of libel, they were actually committed to the Tower! their passage, by water, to which, was a triumphal progress.

While they lay in durance, the illustrious Seven were thronged with titled, and distinguished, visitors, from morning till night, and, (which enraged James above all), a deputation of Nonconformists waited upon them, to express sympathy and condolence.

Out-of-doors, the excitement was great, and rose to fever heat on the announcement of the birth of a Prince, on the second day of the incarceration of the Bishops.

They were brought up before the King's Bench, to plead: their council having failed in certain technical objections, one and all declared themselves "Not Guilty," and the Court now admitted them to bail. The

Trial of the Seven Bishops took place, June 29-30, 1688.—

The Prelates were attended to the Court by twenty-nine temporal peers, a mighty gathering of gentlemen, and innumerable multitudes of the middle, and lower, classes: scarcely any of the latter could, however, get in, to hear the proceedings, so full was the chamber of the "upper ten," (sixty noblemen, at least, being present!) The

Judges were Wright, Chief-Justice; Allybone; Holloway; and Powell,—the chief Counsel for the Crown, Powis; Williams; and Shower,—and for the defence, Sawyer; Finch; Pollexfen; and Somers. The

Charge,—was that the Bishops had committed a misdemeanour, by *writing, and publishing*, (in presenting it to the King), *a false, malicious, and seditious libel*.

The *writing* of the alleged libel had been acknowledged by the Bishops, but when it came to proving the *publication*, the case for the prosecution threatened to break down for want of evidence on this point, and, thus, the case fail to be decided on its merits, which would have been a deplorably unsatisfactory issue. At last, however, the cowardly Sunderland shuffled into the box, and witnessed to his having been present, when the Bishops laid the Petition before the King. The publication being now attested, the great question as to whether or not the document was a libel was reached, thus opening up the all-

important subjects of the right of the Sovereign to dispense with statutes, and that of the subjects to petition him to redress grievances.

The gist of the defence is pithily put in the short, but singularly able, address of Somers,—

“*Seditious* the Petition could not be, nor could it possibly stir up sedition in the minds of the people, because it was presented to the King in private; *false* it could not be, for the matter of it was true; there could be nothing of *malice*, for the occasion was not sought, but the thing was pressed upon them; and a *libel* it could not be, because the intent was innocent, and they kept within the bounds set up by the law that gives the subject leave to apply to his prince, by petition, when he is aggrieved.”

The Crown advocates shewed themselves miserably feeble.

In summing up, Wright charged dead against the prisoners, declaring that any petition calculated to disturb the Government was a libel,—and Allybone expressed like views, but much more strongly: Powell, and Holloway, however, pronounced it as their opinion that the Bishops had committed no offence.

It was night when the jury retired, and, owing to the obstinacy of one of their number, Arnold, the King's brewer, it was 6 o'clock the next morning before they were agreed. At 10 o'clock, (June 30), the Court reassembled, and the jury were brought in: amidst breathless silence, their verdict was demanded, but, when the Foreman uttered the welcome words “Not Guilty,” the flood-gates of popular enthusiasm gave way: the Court resounded with deafening cheers, again-and-again-renewed,—the plaudits were taken up by the crowds outside,—and, in a few minutes, all London was wildly huzzaing. The bells were set ringing, and, at night, there was a general illumination: bonfires blazed in every direction, and the Pope was burned in effigy.

The news of the acquittal rapidly spread throughout the country, and was received everywhere with triumphant rejoicings, even the Army, upon which the King relied so confidently, displaying delight at the result of the trial.—James had been reviewing the troops, (now 16,000 strong), on Hounslow Heath, on the day the verdict was returned,

and had, after the inspection, retired to the tent of the General, Lord Feversham, when, suddenly, he heard shouts from every part of the camp: Feversham was sent to enquire the cause, and, returning, told the King, "It was nothing but the rejoicing of the soldiers, for the acquittal of the Bishops," to which James replied, "Do you call that nothing? But, so much the worse for them."

Powell and Holloway were removed from the Bench, for their favorable charge to the Jury,—by which illegal act it was apparent that James was proof against all the teachings of experience.

Of this, further evidence was soon afforded in several regiments of *Irish soldiers* being brought over, from Ireland, to England, (under the advice of the French Ambassador), James's confidence in his English troops having been greatly shaken since their exhibition of sympathy with the Prelates. These new-comers were, (as Papists, aliens, and tools of the King), detested by the people, the national feeling against them finding expression in the satirical song, "*Lillibulero*."

The persecution of the Bishops had put the finishing stroke to the alienation between James and the people, and ranged clergy and laity in avowed hostility to him. Nevertheless, so strong "is the influence of established government," and so sure were they of civil and religious freedom under Mary, (the next heir), that the outraged nation would, almost certainly, have borne with the King till his death, but for the alleged birth of a Prince, (who was christened "James").

The Protestant party declared no birth had taken place in the palace, but that the child had been smuggled into the Queen's room. It is impossible to decide whether or not these allegations were correct, but the case certainly does look very black against James and his party!—But this could not be proved, and, meanwhile, here was a child who, if he lived, would cut Mary and Anne out of the succession,—and, brought up in the Romish faith, and with the Stuart notions of Divine Right, would, on coming to the Throne, continue his father's policy. Not a gleam of hope for the country's future appeared, unless decisive measures should be at once taken. In this crisis, all eyes turned, naturally, to

William of Orange,—who, by birth, (being grandson of Charles I.), and marriage, (with the heiress-presumptive of the English Crown); and by his position, as champion of Protestantism on the Continent, and as the great opponent of Louis XIV., was, naturally, deeply interested in English affairs, and kept himself well posted up in them.

He had ventured to remonstrate with his father-in-law, and urge him to moderate, impartial, constitutional, measures—in vain! His interest in England deepened as the King's measures grew more and more outrageous, until he, with Mary, felt compelled, upon the publication of the 1687 Indulgence, to publicly declare their disapprobation of the act.

In this same year, some of the Protestant leaders opened with him those secret communications which issued so momentously, by begging him to interfere, actively, in view of the threatened repeal of the Test Act,—to which he replied that he would do so, should Parliament annul that measure.

From the time of his remonstrating with him, his father-in-law had treated William with bare civility,—speedily, they became thoroughly estranged from one another,—and, finally, they came to loggerheads, James complaining that the disaffected fugitives from England were harboured in Holland, and that the Prince corrupted the English regiments in the Dutch service; while William accused the King of a design to pass over Mary, in favor of Anne, (who, it was reported, was ready, in that case, to turn Papist).

Meanwhile, James advanced from outrage to outrage, until, at last, William felt he could not, in his position, and with such dangers menacing the liberties of England, and the Protestant cause, remain any longer quiescent.

Accordingly, he sent over an Envoy, Dykvelt, with instructions to secretly communicate, in his name, with all classes and denominations of Protestants, gathering their views and wishes, and assuring them of the Prince's deep interest in, and sympathy with them.

Dykvelt accomplished his mission so admirably, that he turned the hearts of the whole Protestant community to the Prince,—and numbers of the highest personages,

both in Church and State, made, through the Envoy, applications to William to champion their cause.

Whether, (had not the Prince's birth been announced), he would have done so, or have still waited, can only be conjectured,—but that birth brought the crisis: there was, evidently, no resource left him, and the English nation, but “a confederacy for their mutual interest.”

William, forced to dissemble, had sent off Zuleistein to congratulate James on the appearance of “the little stranger,”—and that faithful servant, on his return, brought his master a formal

Invitation to William,—to land, with an armed force, to aid in recovering the Laws, and liberties, of England.

The Prince accepted their proposal, and immediately commenced his preparations.

Louis penetrated his design, and sent repeated warnings to the English monarch, offering to aid him,—but James rejected, with incredulity, his kindly proffers, being utterly unable to realize the fact that the people could possibly break into rebellion. By the end of September, the Prince was ready to start.

When too late for him to take any effective measures, James received, from his Minister at the Hague, authentic information that he might shortly expect a formidable invasion from Holland. The blow at first paralyzed him. Recovering himself, and advising with his Ministers, who were alarmed equally with himself, he determined on redress of grievances:—

1. The Commission Court was dissolved.
2. The President and Fellows of Magdalen, Oxford, were restored.
3. Sunderland and Father Petre were removed from the Council.
4. All the Corporations had their old Charters returned.

At the same time, James fawned upon the prelates he had so lately persecuted, and he sent overtures to the Dutch, offering to make any alliance with them, for mutual security. But all these sops came too late; not a soul was deceived by them.

For the defence of the Kingdom, however, James was able to muster 40,000 troops, under Feversham, while a fleet of 37 ships, under the Earl of Dartmouth, was sent

out to intercept William's expected flotilla, which consisted of 60 men of war, and 700 transports, carrying 11,000 foot and 4,500 horse.

Before sailing, William despatched to England an able **Manifesto, Sept. 30,**—which

1. Enumerated the principal proceedings of James's Government, since his accession, which had been opposed to, or subversive of, civil liberty and Protestantism.

2. Ascribed all these measures to evil counsellors, and declared the necessity of delivering the misguided King from their influence.

3. Declared that he himself, being nearly connected with, and having an interest in, it, felt it is duty to protect the civil and religious liberties of the country,—and that, for this end, and not for conquest, he was about to cross over with an army.

4. Stated that his purposes were to

(1.) Secure legal religious toleration.

(2.) Have all matters in dispute settled in a free Parliament.

(3.) Enquire into the validity of the birth of the baby-Prince.

This document reached England only a few hours before the Prince himself, but spread like wild-fire, so that its contents were speedily known throughout the country.

William sailed, Oct. 19, from Helvoet-Sluis, with a S.W. wind, bound for the Yorkshire coast, where Danby was awaiting him : the breeze, however, veered to due W., during the night, blowing a gale, and compelled the expedition to return, damaged, to Holland.

William sailed again, Nov. 1, and ran into Torbay, Nov. 5 (!). Having disembarked, William advanced to Exeter, and was favorably received, but so potent was still the terror which the atrocities, following Monmouth's Rebellion, had excited, that none of the people joined the invaders : for four or five days, too, no one of mark, out of the numbers who had sworn to support him, came forward, and he began to fear he had been deceived, and to meditate a return.

At this juncture, however, Lord Cornbury, (son of Clarendon), set the example of desertion, (taking with him portion of his cavalry regiment), and, thereby, greatly en-

couraged the Prince. Within a few days, the standard of revolt was raised in the North, in Cheshire, and in the Midlands.

James reached the Camp, at Salisbury, Novr. 19, only to find the Army disaffected, and the officers evidently favorable to the Prince's cause, and to suffer, on the 22nd, the desertion of Lord Churchill, (afterwards the great Duke of Marlborough), who carried with him the Earl of Grafton, (Charles II.'s illegitimate son), and some troops of dragoons. Next day, a large number of officers went over to the invader, to whom were, meanwhile, flocking noblemen and gentlemen from all parts of the country.

The continued desertions, (especially Churchill's and Grafton's), so alarmed and perplexed James, that he determined to retire, with his forces, to London,—a most unwise measure! The retreating Army reached Andover, and bivouacked: Prince George, (husband of the Princess Anne), and Ormond, supped with the King, and, the same night, rode back to join William. His son-in-law's treachery deeply affected the King, but a more deadly blow than this was in store for him: the Princess Anne, pretending dread of her father's anger, left Whitehall, with Lady Churchill, and fled to join the insurgents, at Nottingham. The intelligence of her going over to the enemy completely unmanned James: he burst into tears, exclaiming, "God help me! My own children have forsaken me," and, from that moment, seemed to have lost all spirit to contend with his misfortunes.

On reaching London, however, he assembled and took counsel with the Peers who were in town, and, by their advice, issued a

Proclamation,—announcing that he had

1. Signed writs for a new Parliament, to meet on Jany. 13.

2. Granted a free pardon to those in rebellion against him.

It was decided, also, to send Commissioners to treat with William, and, accordingly, Nottingham, Halifax, and Godolphin being chosen, waited upon the Prince, at Hungerford, (whither he had advanced), Dec. 8, but effected nothing, beyond an arrangement that all matters in dispute should be settled by the coming Parliament—William re-

fusing to see them himself, and deputing Clarendon and Oxford to treat with them.

Orange's tone, as displayed through his Commissioners, was that of sovereignty, and his advance on London was not stayed, while the most alarming reports reached James from all quarters. He had, before, determined on sending the Queen, and her alleged son, out of the country for safety, and, on the night of Decr. 10, they were conveyed to Greenwich, where they embarked, and safely reached Calais.

On learning the result of the negotiations with, and the temper of, William, the

King,—(Decr. 11—on which date the *reign* is regarded as *ended*), accompanied by, only, Sir Edward Hales, **quitted London**, (having previously,—with the malicious intention of involving affairs in confusion—cancelled the writs for the new Parliament), towards Faversham.

This flight thunderstruck all. Feversham, on hearing of it, disbanded the Royal troops, and let them loose upon the country.

Riots broke out in London,—all the Romish Chapels being destroyed, and the house of the Spanish Ambassador, (wherein many of the Papists had placed their property for safety), ransacked.

Happily, the Peers in London were equal to the occasion: meeting at Guildhall, they assumed the control of affairs till William should arrive,—choosing Halifax as Speaker,—empowering the Mayor and Aldermen to preserve the peace of the City,—and issuing orders, (which were promptly obeyed), to the Army, the garrisons, and the Fleet. At the same time, they sent to William to congratulate him on his success,—express their approval of his cause,—and hasten his advance.

Meanwhile, an untoward event, (which led to grave difficulties in the next reign), had occurred,—*viz.*, the failure of James to escape. At Faversham, he and Hales were, by some boatmen, detained, on suspicion of being Father Petre and another Jesuit. On being landed, however, the King was recognized, and rescued from the populace, by Lord Winchelsea. On the news reaching them, the Council sent guards to conduct James to London, where he arrived Decr., the people receiving him with

half-pitying, half-mocking, acclamations. On the 18th, William entered the city in triumph, and counsel was at once taken on the perplexing question, "What to do with the King?"

It was decided that the best plan would be to terrify him into, and put no obstacle in the way of his, leaving the Kingdom. Accordingly, Dutch guards were posted at Whitehall for the purpose, (he was given to understand), of protecting him from the populace,—Feversham, being sent, by him, to the Prince with a polite request for an interview, was placed under arrest, on the pretext that he had no passport,—and, when he was supposed to be sufficiently alarmed, Halifax, Shrewsbury, and Delamere, were sent to James, while in bed, with a message from William, to the effect that, for the peace of London, and his own security, he must immediately quit the Capital, for a country retreat, at Ham.

James, (evidently with a view to escape), begged that he might be permitted to choose Rochester in preference to Ham, which, of course, he was allowed to do.

He was escorted to his new abode : and there lingered a few days,—but, at length, realizing his complete desertion, and the utter uselessness, and, perhaps, danger of remaining, he left Rochester, (the guards being judiciously negligent), Decr. 22, in company of the Duke of Berwick, and three other persons, and embarking on board a frigate, in waiting, reached France three days after his escape.

From Decr. 11, 1688, to Feb. 13, (when William and Mary accepted the Crown), 1689, was an Interregnum.

The day after his entry into London, William was waited upon by the Magistrates, and the Corporation, the Bishops, and the London clergy, the Nonconformist ministers, lawyers, and others, to pay their respects, and hail him as the National Deliverer.

The first thing now claiming attention was the

SETTLEMENT OF THE GOVERNMENT.—Some of William's counsellors urged him to ascend the Throne, by right of conquest : this he firmly refused to do, but assembled the Peers, (to the number of about ninety), and begged them to deliberate, and advise him, as to what was best to be done.

At the same time, he convoked a somewhat motley

House of Commons,—composed of all Members who had sat in any one of Charles II.'s Parliaments, and the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and fifty citizens representing the Common Council.

Each House, separately, having debated the question, presented an

Address,—desiring the Prince to

1. Issue circular letters, calling a Convention Parliament.
2. Take upon himself, meantime, the administration.

William at once summoned a

Convention Parliament, for Jan. 22, 1689.

They at once passed *two resolutions* :—

1. "That King James II., having endeavoured to subvert the constitution of the kingdom, by breaking the original contract between king and people, and, by the advice of Jesuits and other wicked persons, having violated the fundamental laws, and having withdrawn himself out of this kingdom, has abdicated the government, and that the throne is thereby become vacant."

2. "That it hath been found by experience to be inconsistent with the safety and welfare of this Protestant kingdom to be governed by a Popish prince."

The Lords accepted the second resolution without a dissentient voice ; but were by no means unanimous on the first. Several proposals were made as to the settlement of the crown, the chief of which were—

1. That James should be restored, on his solemn promise to rule constitutionally.

2. That James should remain nominally king ; but that the government should be carried on by a Regent appointed by Parliament.

3. That James having abdicated, Mary should succeed as nearest heir,—James's son being regarded as supposititious.

4. That a fresh monarch should be chosen.

William, hearing of these differences of opinion, sent for some of the leading Peers, and plainly told them that he would exercise no Regency, and that, if he were to be king at all, it must be, not as merely the consort of Mary (in which case he would be her subject, and lose his dignity at her death, should he survive her),—but in his own right, and for life. At the same time he expressed his

desire, that, in case of Mary dying before himself, the Princess Anne should succeed to the throne, in preference to any children he might have by a second marriage.

On this basis the Crown was settled. By

The First Act of Settlement, 1689,—William and Mary were proclaimed joint sovereigns, the executive power being, however, entirely in William's hands. If one of them predeceased the other, the survivor was to occupy the throne. After them, the succession was to be in their children, or, if they left no issue, in Anne and her lawful heirs, to the exclusion of any children that William might have by another wife.

Both Houses then agreed to a **Declaration of Rights, 1689**, (from which was framed the *Bill of Rights*).

It declared the illegality of

1. The sovereign's dispensing with laws, or enacting them without consent of Parliament.
2. All ecclesiastical Commission Courts.
3. The sovereign's raising money without grant of Parliament.
4. Prosecutions for presenting petitions to the sovereign.
5. Raising, or maintaining, a standing army without consent of Parliament.
6. Excessive bail, fines, and punishments generally.
7. Making grants to any person of fines or forfeitures from prisoners not yet tried.

It affirmed also, that

1. Protestant subjects may bear arms,—suited to their condition, and as allowed by law,—for their defence.
2. Elections to Parliament, and all debates and proceedings in the Houses, should be free.
3. Juries should be duly impanelled, and jurors, in cases of high treason, should be freeholders.
4. Parliaments should be held frequently.

On February 13th, 1689, the two Houses waited upon William and Mary at Whitehall,—the *Declaration of Rights* was read,—Halifax formally offered them the Crown, and William accepted it on behalf of himself and Mary, adding a promise to uphold the Protestant faith, and to respect the laws, liberties, and property of the nation.

This was the last act in the **GLORIOUS REVOLUTION**.

STATUTE, (not elsewhere mentioned).

The provisions of the

Poor Law Act of Charles II. were made more severe, by a Bill, 1685,—by which no settlement could be obtained without giving in a notice to the parish officers.

ECCLESIASTICAL, &c. AFFAIRS.

Primate.—Wm. Sancroft.

James's persistent efforts to reëstablish Romanism, and their issues, (of which the alienation of the Establishment, and its purgation from its "besotted loyalty," are to be specially noted), constitute the almost entirety of the annals of religion during this reign: they are so intimately connected with the political events of the period that they have been already narrated under

"Parliamentary and other Political Affairs."

With regard to the King's professed anxiety for toleration, it is clear that it was assumed to advance his great end by freeing the Papists from all disabilities, penalties, and restrictions, and enlisting the powerful Dissenting interest on his side.

James was always, in heart and will, and, in the earlier portion of his reign, (before he formed the plan of a coalition between the Romanists and the Nonconformists), actually a bitter persecutor, (as poor old Baxter, for one, found, to his cost).

The conduct of the long-tried Dissenters, when tempted by the bribe of Indulgence, presents a rare, memorable, laud-transcending, instance of noble, self-denying, patriotism.

VARIOUS MATTERS.

Owing, chiefly, to the exertions of James and the Pepys, the

Navy greatly increased in numbers and efficiency: at the date of the Revolution, the country possessed 173 ships-of-war, manned by 42,000 sailors.

There was, (as already stated), a great

Augmentation of the standing Army,—

"Out of the wreck of the Army that had fought in the Royal cause during the Civil War, Charles selected a

number of Cavalier gentlemen, from which source sprang the First and Second Regiments of Life Guards. At the disbanding of the Commonwealth Army, two regiments were reëmbodied—Monk's regiment of foot, since called 'The Coldstream Guards,' and Cromwell's regiment of Horse Guards, ('Oxford Blues.') Another regiment was organized out of the forces which had served under the Duke of York in the Spanish Netherlands: this became the First Regiment of Foot Guards, but, since the battle of Waterloo, has been known as 'The Grenadier Guards.' The Regular Army, in the reign of Charles II., amounted to about 5,000 men; in the next reign, it was augmented to 30,000, being designed as the instrument by which James proposed to effect his great purpose."

INVENTIONS, DISCOVERIES, &c.

The

Diving-Bell was invented, by William Phipps, a sailor.

SCOTCH AFFAIRS.

Parliament met Ap. 23, 1685,—and shewed itself more slavishly loyal than the English Chamber: it

1. Declared its abhorrence of "all principles and positions, contrary and derogatory, to the King's sacred, supreme, sovereign, and absolute, power and authority."

2. Made preachers in "conventicles," and preachers and hearers at open-air services, punishable by death, and confiscation of property.

3. Constituted it treason to give or take the Covenants.

4. Settled a revenue, for life, on the King.

Claverhouse and his dragoons, with renewed energy, continued to hunt out and down the staunch Covenanters.

The arbitrary rule of Charles II., towards the end of his reign, had driven into exile, in Holland, large numbers of Scotch and English Puritans, who, keeping up communication with the old countries, followed with eager anxiety the course of home affairs.

Thus, they speedily became acquainted with the severe enactments and government which, in Scotland, marked James's accession,—and realized his policy of reigning by prerogative, and restoring Popery: at the same time, in-

telligence was received by the refugees that Scotland was ripe for revolt.

ARGYLE'S REBELLION, 1685,—was induced by this news—he and his associates forming the project of an expedition to Scotland, where he sanguinely hoped to be supported by 5,000 of his clansmen, and by the Western Covenanters.

It was, also, arranged, (as already narrated), that Monmouth should make an attempt upon England,—and that, to preserve unity of purpose and operation, two Englishmen (sharers in the Rye House Plot), Ayloff and Rumbold, should accompany Argyle; and two of the Scotch party, Fletcher and Ferguson, go with Monmouth: also, to each expedition a Council was appointed, to direct its movements.

Argyle, with the English representatives, and Sir Patrick Hume, Sir John Cochrane, and a few other Scotch gentlemen, embarked, (before Monmouth, who was not ready), at Vlief, May 2, and, in four days, reached the Orkneys.

Here, two of the party, being sent on shore, were seized, at Kirkwall, by order of the Bishop—a most unfortunate accident! since they revealed the design, and so put the Government on the alert; Argyle, too, rendered the incident still more untoward, by remaining some while, vainly negotiating for the release of his friends, thus giving to the authorities time to make their preparations, which they were able to do the more effectually, because they were pretty sure that he would direct his steps to his own country,—which he actually did, touching, first, at Dunstaffnage, in Lorn, and thence, proceeding to Campbelltown, in Kintyre, publishing a

Proclamation,—declaring his object to be the restoration of Protestantism, and the lasting exclusion of Popery.

No persons of position came to his support, but his vassals, to the number of 2,500, joined him. With this force he wished to make a stand, but his Council insisted upon advancing into the Western Lowlands: accordingly, the Earl, with great unwillingness, divided his small force, sending Cochrane and Hume, with one part, to the Lowlands, and remaining, with the other, in the West.

Cochrane and Hume advanced as far as Greenock, and then, finding that the people did not join them, returned

to Argyle, only, however, to again dispute with him as to what course to pursue.

Meanwhile, the Royal Troops captured the Ealan Ghierig Castle,—wherein were most of the invaders' stores—a virtual death-blow to the attempt.

In desperation, it was, finally, resolved to advance upon Glasgow, the Covenanters' stronghold. On crossing the Leven, Argyle found himself confronted by the enemy, and determined to engage: Hume, however, overruled him, and it was decided to make a night march on the city.

The insurgents lost their way in the wilds and bye-paths by which they were compelled to advance, (owing to the main roads being well guarded), and were so scattered that, when, at daylight, Kilpatrick was reached, only 500 of them mustered. All hope was now abandoned, and the leaders fled, leaving their followers to shift for themselves.

Argyle fell into the hands of the Royalists,—was taken to Edinburgh,—and there, (after enduring, with fortitude, many indignities, amongst which was his being threatened with the torture, unless he implicated his associates), was executed, June 30, on the old, unjust, sentence passed upon him under Charles II.

Rumbold and Ayloffe, too, were taken, and executed, the former at Edinburgh, (because he was dying), the latter before the gate of the Temple, London. The Campbells suffered severely: many were hanged, without trial, and 3,000 shipped off to the plantations, (many of the men having, previously, their ears cut off, and the women their cheeks branded),—while the country, for 30 miles round Inverary, was devastated, and the nets and fishing-boats on the coast destroyed.

James's persecuting policy was continued in Scotland, (as in England), until he realized the desirability of conciliating the Covenanters: then he issued a

Declaration of Indulgence, 1687,—to give relief to tender consciences (!), promising, therein, to "maintain his loving subjects in all their properties and possessions, as well of Church and Abbey lands, as of any others."

It was manifest, however, that this measure was meant to benefit the Romanists only, for all his Ministers whom he confided in were of that faith.

The Prince of Orange's arrival in England, and James's abdication, were very welcome in Scotland.

William, very judiciously, determined not to assume the Executive without the assent of the Scotch: accordingly, he summoned together all the Scotchmen of position then in London, to give their opinion as to the best course to adopt in the emergency: they, (adopting the views of the English Houses), unanimously begged him to accept the administration, till things could be permanently settled.

IRISH AFFAIRS.

In Ireland, (because, most of its inhabitants being Papists, the national sentiment was not—as it was in England and Scotland—against him), James shewed his policy, openly and fully, from the first. Ormond was recalled from his Lieutenancy, and the entire power placed in the hands of General Talbot, (soon after made Earl of Tyrconnel), a bigoted, ardent, Romanist, of ferocious temper.

All Protestants were, (on pretence of preserving the public safety), deprived of arms,—the Army was remodelled,—and the Protestant officers and men, (to the number of 4,500), dismissed, their uniform being taken from them, and they being turned out into the streets, to famish.

Clarendon was, (in virtual banishment), sent over as Lord-Lieutenant,—but found, on his arrival, that, (in consequence of his refusal to become a Romanist), he had not the slightest authority, but was a mere puppet, and virtually a prisoner, of Tyrconnel, under whose direction the work of completely subjugating to James's will, and Romanizing the country, was pushed forward so unscrupulously, as to disgust and alarm the more honorable and intelligent Papists,—Protestants were banished from the Council and the Bench,—the Charters of all the Corporations were annulled, and new ones, giving James a complete ascendancy, substituted,—and all the Protestant freemen were expelled, and replaced by Papists.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS.

France.	Germany.	Spain.	Pope.
LOUIS XIV.	LEOPOLD I.	CHARLES II.	INNOCENT XI.

Houses of Nassau, (or Orange), and of Stuart,
(united).

WILLIAM III. AND MARY II.

Dates of Birth, Accession, and Death :—

WILLIAM,—1650 (at the Hague); Feb. 13, 1689–1702, March 8, [at Kensington,—of fever consequent upon a fracture of his collar-bone, caused by a fall from horse-back), and fatally aggravated by his health having previously been rapidly failing, from asthmatic consumption.]

MARY,—1662; Feb. 13, 1689–1694, Dec. 28, (at Kensington,—of virulent small-pox, a plague then raging in London).

Descent, &c. :—

WILLIAM,—Posthumous son of William, Prince of Orange, Stadtholder of the United Provinces; and of Mary, *eldest daughter of Charles I. of England*.

The Republican party in the United Provinces excluded William from succeeding his father, and in 1667, headed by De Witt, the Grand Pensionary, and his brother, they passed the *Perpetual Edict*, abolishing the Stadtholdership.

But when, in 1672, Louis XIV. invaded the country, and the people found themselves defenceless, owing to the policy of the Republican chiefs, they rose in tumult,—slew the De Witts,—compelled the repeal of the *Edict*,—and insisted on William's being made Stadtholder, he being then only 22.

He placed himself at the head of the disorganized Dutch army, reanimated and rehabilitated it,—and, by judicious conduct and bravery, drove the French, who numbered 100,000, out of Holland, in two campaigns. The war, however, went on with varying success until 1678, when it was closed by the *Peace of Nimeguen*.

In 1677, William had visited England, and married Mary, much to the annoyance of Louis.

The Revocation of the Edict of Nantes, by Louis, in 1685, and symptoms of that monarch's ambitious policy again breaking bounds, caused the formation against him of

The League of Augsburg, between Holland, Savoy, Bavaria, and Brandenburg, to which were afterwards added the German Empire and Spain.

It was this war into which William induced England to enter, and which the Peace of Ryswick ended.

MARY,—Elder daughter of James II., by Anne Hyde. *William and Mary were, consequently, cousins.*

Character :—

WILLIAM.—Of medium height, thin, with ungainly limbs and stooping shoulders : forehead ample ; nose high and aquiline ; lips thin and close-set ; countenance pale and haggard, but lit up by keen, eagle eyes ; weak and delicate in frame, and a martyr to chronic asthma,—yet capable of enduring any amount of fatigue and privation, and extremely fond of athletic exercises, in which he greatly excelled.

An epicure, and unchaste ; but a most attached and loving husband. His wife's death threw him into dangerous convulsions, and for some time afterwards he seemed utterly paralyzed and inconsolable, declaring that he could never head an army again.

Reserved and taciturn, to apparent sullenness,—which is explicable on the ground of his having had such heavy responsibilities thrust upon him while a mere youth, that he acquired an unusual gravity ; uncouth in manner ; sagacious, calculating, and vigorous ; “the last sovereign of this country whose understanding and energy of character have been very distinguished.”

A profound politician ; possessing calm and undaunted courage ; the most accomplished captain of his age.

Had no taste for literature, art, or science,—his attainments consisting only of those subjects, (*e.g.*, languages and mathematics), which could be turned to account in war.

His policy was dictated by the desire to thwart the designs of Louis, and to secure the liberties of Protestants in Europe.

To these ends there is no doubt he made England subservient to a great extent ; but that he used this country only as a cat's-paw for his own ambition is a libel. He broadened and deepened the foundations of England's civil

rights, and bestowed upon her an extensive charter of religious liberty ; while the very wars in which he made use of her resources were as beneficial to English Protestants as to those on the Continent.

There is no doubt that William was suspicious of his English advisers, and relied on the counsels of his own countrymen ; but this is accounted for by the fact that, as soon as the Revolution was effected, the nation split up into *cliques*, animated by unpatriotic selfishness, and the very men who had invited him to invade the country and accept the Throne, were the first to enter into correspondence with James for his restoration.

MARY.—Tall ; well-formed ; with a bright and agreeable countenance.

Graceful ; courteous ; affable.

Pious ; amiable ; benevolent ; a faithful and devoted wife.

She has been much censured for her conduct to her father, whereas she merits the highest praise for preferring the cause of freedom to the ties of nature and affection.

It was pure patriotism, not ambition, that led her to acquiesce in the Revolution. Her ascending the Throne was a necessity consequent upon that event, but that she did not covet or value the Crown, *for itself*, is apparent from the fact that she consented to William's possessing the sole executive power, and that, after her accession, she yielded her will entirely to his, and took so little share in the government, that she speedily came to be looked upon as merely William's consort.

Issue.—None. William did not re-marry after Mary's decease.

Claim to the Throne.—*Good, the Crown being settled upon them by Parliament*, which has power to order the succession.

WAR.

WITH FRANCE, 1689-1697.

Real Origin.—William's desire to strengthen the *League of Augsburg* against Louis XIV., by inducing his newly-adopted country to join it. In this he readily succeeded, on account of the annoyance which the English felt at the countenance Louis showed to James II.

War was accordingly declared, May, 1689, the

Alleged Causes of which were, that Louis had

1. Lent James II. aid in his expedition to Ireland.
2. Attacked, in violation of treaty engagements, the Continental allies of England.

3. Seized portions of English territory in N. America, —and encroached upon her Newfoundland fisheries.

4. Refused to honour the British flag, and allowed his ships to make depredations upon the English marine.

Parliament gladly voted £2,000,000 for the prosecution of the War.

Principal Battles, &c., in the Period :—

The Earl of Marlborough (late Churchill) took over a body of auxiliaries to join the Dutch army. The latter was defeated at

Fleurus, July, 1690, with heavy loss,—the French also suffering severely.

Shortly after William's departure to Ireland, to oppose James II., a French fleet of eighty sail entered the Channel, to effect a diversion in favour of the deposed monarch. An English and Dutch squadron of fifty-six vessels encountered the enemy off

Beachy Head, June 30, 1690.—*French victorious.*

French admiral,—Le Comte de Tourville.

English admiral,—Earl of Torrington, (formerly Admiral Herbert).

Dutch admiral,—Evertsen.

Torrington engaged unwillingly, and placed the Dutch ships so that they should bear the brunt of battle. The engagement lasted all day, until ended by a storm. The allies withdrew to the Thames,—the Dutch having lost six ships and a large number of men ; and the English, only two ships and 400 men.

The Channel was now left unprotected, and an invasion was feared.

Tourville, a month after his victory, landed in Torbay, and burned Teignmouth ; but the victory of the *Boyne* deterred him from further operations.

Torrington was tried for disgracing the English navy, and acquitted ; but William compelled him to strike his flag.

The war was ended by the
Treaty of Ryswick, 1697.

PARLIAMENTARY AND OTHER POLITICAL AFFAIRS.

Prime Ministers.—Lord Mordaunt, Sir John Lowther, Lord Godolphin.

William's choice of Ministers was one of his first cares. In this selection he wisely included various shades of opinion, and friend and antagonist alike.

The Secretaries of State appointed were the Earl of Nottingham, an enemy to his succession, and the Earl of Shrewsbury, his firm supporter.

The President of the Council was Danby.

The Privy Seal was Halifax, Danby's rival.

The Great Seal, and

The Treasury, were put in Commission,—the Chief Commissioner of the former being Maynard, and of the latter, Mordaunt, (afterwards Earl of Peterborough).

Places and honours were bestowed upon William's Dutch friends :—

Bentinck was made Earl of Portland, a Privy Councillor, Privy Purse, and Groom of the Stole.

Zulestein became Master of the Robes. (A few years after he was created Earl of Rochford.)

Schomberg was created Duke Schomberg, and made Master of the Ordnance.

Auverquerque was appointed Master of the Horse. (Later on he was created Earl of Grantham.)

THE CONVENTION PARLIAMENT, in order to obviate an Election at so unsettled a period, *passed*

A Bill, making itself a regular constitutional Assembly, and then proceeded with the following measures :—

1. An Act demanding from all Members of Parliament, and from all in office, subscription to fresh Oaths of Supremacy and Allegiance,—and providing that all clergymen refusing to accede by August 1, should be deprived of their livings.

2. The Toleration Act, 1689,—*with the object of freeing Nonconformists from the disabilities and persecution under which they had suffered during the reigns of Charles II. and James II.*

It then declares all the above to constitute the rights and liberties of the people, and forbids any past infringement of any of them to be regarded, or used, as precedents, in the future.

3. *Recapitulates the provisions of the First Act of Settlement,—declares William and Mary to be the lawful sovereigns of the British Empire,—and pledges the Lords and Commons to uphold the new Settlement and Succession.*

4. *Abrogates the old Oaths of Supremacy and Allegiance,—substituting the following in their stead :—*

(1.) “I do sincerely promise and swear that I will be faithful and bear true allegiance to their majesties King William and Queen Mary: So help me God.”

(2.) “I do swear that I do from my heart abhor, detest, and abjure, as impious and heretical, that damnable doctrine and position that princes excommunicated or deprived by the Pope, or any authority of the See of Rome, may be deposed or murdered by their subjects, or any other whatsoever. And I do declare that no foreign prince, person, prelate, state, or potentate hath, or ought to have, any jurisdiction, power, superiority, preëminence, or authority, ecclesiastical or spiritual, within this realm: So help me God.”

5. *Declares that any Sovereign becoming, or marrying, a Papist, shall be for ever excluded from the Throne, and forfeit the kingdom’s allegiance,—and that the Crown shall, in such case, descend to the next Protestant in the line of succession.*

6. *Orders that all future Sovereigns shall subscribe, and repeat, the Declaration mentioned in the Disabling Bill of Charles II.,—such Declaration to be made at Coronation, or in full Parliament.*

7. *Enacts that no charter, grant, or pardon, given before Oct. 23, 1689, shall be impeached or invalidated by the Bill of Rights.*

Parliament then legislated upon matters in the last reign :—

1. The attainders of Lord Russell, Algernon Sidney, Alderman Cornish, and Mrs. Lisle, were reversed.

2. The outrageous fines imposed were declared

illegal,—and those levied by Judge Jeffreys were taken, with interest, from his property.

3. The judgment on Titus Oates was reversed.

4. Earls Peterborough and Salisbury, Sir Edward Hales, and others, were impeached for various alleged illegal acts. This was done by the Whigs, (whose influence was paramount in this Parliament), out of enmity to the opposite party, to which the impeached persons belonged.

Towards the end of the Session,

A Corporation Act was introduced by the Whigs,—having for its end the restoration of their rights to those Corporations which had given up their charters at the royal bidding. It was, however, defeated, after a severe struggle, owing to its containing a severe and revengeful provision that any one who had been party to the giving up of the charter of any borough should not hold office in the latter for seven years.

A dissolution followed.

Halifax was, shortly after, deprived of his post, and Danby, (now Marquis of Caermarthen), promoted many of his minions to office.

STATUTES.

The First Mutiny Act, 1689 :—

Origin.—Disaffection being apparent in some of the regiments, William determined to send them to Holland, and replace them by Dutch troops. The first regiment ordered on foreign service was one stationed at Ipswich, and consisted chiefly of Scotchmen. On receiving their route, the men mutinied, and marched towards Scotland. They were followed by Ginkell, with three regiments of Dutch cavalry,—surrendered,—and were sent abroad, as decided.

Provisions :—

1. That there shall be a standing army in England. This is stated in the Preamble, which declares that, (though it is illegal to keep a standing army without the consent of Parliament), the Sovereign and Parliament deem it necessary for the safety of the country, the defence

of our dominions, and the preservation of the "balance of power in Europe," that England should have forces always under arms.

2. That as regards military offences, the Army shall be under martial law, administered by courts-martial, (whose functions are defined).

Up to this time the soldier had been on the same footing as the civilian in respect of the law, being amenable for every offence to the ordinary civil courts.

The Bill has since been enlarged, and improved, and now consists of a catalogue of military offences and their penalties, a clear exposition of the constitution and the functions of courts-martial, and regulations as to enlistment, pay, and other matters.

The Act was at first passed for 6 months' operation only; but was frequently renewed during the reign. It is now renewed every year,—so that were not Parliament annually assembled, or were it not, when assembled, to pass the Bill, the army would be disbanded.

ECCLESIASTICAL AND RELIGIOUS AFFAIRS.

Primates.—Sancroft, Tillotson, Tenison.

The Non-Jurors (= *Non-swearers*),—were about 400 *Clergymen and many Temporal Peers, who refused to take the Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy.* They were at first suspended, and finally deprived of their posts and emoluments.

Amongst them were 8 Bishops, viz.,—Sancroft, (the Primate), Frampton, Ken, Lake, Lloyd, Thomas, Turner, and White. The vacant sees were wisely filled, by William, with able, judicious, and moderate men,—*e.g.*, Stillingfleet and Patrick. The *Non-Jurors* were long a rankling thorn in the side of the Government, and of their evangelical and latitudinarian brethren,—enjoying, as they did, the sympathy of the majority of the clergy.

The Toleration Act marks the birth of religious equality in England; but it will be perceived, on studying it, that it is far from being a complete, or even large, measure.

William himself wished to go much further. He proposed to make such changes in the Liturgy and Ritual of the Church of England as should bring back Dissenters

into the pale of the Establishment, and enable their ministers to officiate in it without the necessity for reordination. These changes he intended to embody in a

Comprehension Bill,—to be passed at the same time as the *Toleration Act*.

Accordingly, he appointed

A Commission of Revision,—composed of 10 Bishops, (amongst whom were Stillingfleet, Patrick, Tillotson, and Tenison), and 20 other divines. This Commission prepared a series of alterations, embodying nearly all the concessions demanded by the Presbyterians at the *Savoy Conference*. The High Church party, however, bitterly opposed the contemplated changes, and William, fearing a collision with Convocation, abandoned his scheme,—and dissolved the abortive *Commission*;—and the unlucky *Comprehension Bill*, of course, came to nothing.

The Papists, though excluded from the benefits of the *Toleration Act*, were little annoyed during this reign.

SCOTCH AFFAIRS.

A Convention Parliament met in *March*, 1689,—declared that James had forfeited his right,—and conferred the Crown of Scotland upon William and Mary.

The Jacobite feeling was, however, very strong in the country, especially in the Highlands. The chiefs of the party were the Duke of Gordon, the Archbishop of Glasgow, Earl Balcarres, and Viscount Dundee, (late Graham of Claverhouse, the cruel persecutor of the Covenanters).

Gordon took possession of **Edinburgh Castle**, for James,—and in the Highlands

A Rising took place,—headed by Dundee, who had a following of about 3000 sturdy Highlanders.

Dundee having occupied Blair Castle, “the key of the Northern Highlands,” an English force, 6000 strong, was sent to reduce it. The hostile armies met in the battle of

Killiecrankie, (Perth), July 29, 1689.—*Jacobites victorious.*

Jacobite com.,—Viscount Dundee, (slain.)

Royalist com.,—General Mackay.

On General Mackay's reaching the N. end of *Killiecrankie Pass*, which leads to Blair, Dundee fell upon his

fatigued forces,—completely overwhelmed them,—and drove them, in confused flight, down the Pass. The Royalists lost nearly all their forces, in killed and prisoners; and the greater portion of their stores and baggage.

This disaster was, however, more than counterbalanced by the death of Dundee, who fell while leading a charge against the only two regiments of the foe that made any stand. This event dispirited the rebels, and, accordingly, after a few skirmishes, they dispersed to their dwellings,—so that their victory was actually the defeat of James's cause in Scotland.

The hostile clans speedily gave in their adhesion, one after another, to William,—Edinburgh Castle had been surrendered by Gordon, previously to the battle of Killiecrankie,—and all Scotland, save the Bass Rock garrison, was thus reduced to submission.

Episcopacy was next abolished, and replaced by Presbyterianism.

All seemed now to promise peace and quiet for the rest of the reign; but in the same winter James sent over General Buchan, who revived the rebellion.

IRISH AFFAIRS.

When James, supported by Louis XIV., determined upon an expedition to recover the Crown, he naturally fixed upon Papist Ireland as the scene of his first operations.

The Earl of Tyrconnel, a zealous Romanist, (who had cruelly ill-treated the Protestants, and filled the public posts with Papists), was lord-lieutenant.

He offered William to give up the country to an army sufficiently large to absolve him from all charge of treachery to his late master James. William, however, rejected the proposal, on the council of Halifax, who showed him that the standing army, which was his only safeguard against hostile movements in England, could be kept up only on the ground of Ireland's holding out for James.

Meanwhile, Tyrconnel received news from James that he was about to sail from Brest with a large armament, whereupon the lieutenant declared for the ex-king, and speedily raised a large force of semi-savage, poorly equipped, and untrained Irish.

In the early part of 1689, James landed at Kinsale.—He had about 20 ships,—1200 Irishmen, in the pay of France, and officered by Frenchmen,—and large supplies of arms and ammunition.

From Kinsale he proceeded towards Dublin. At Cork, Tyrconnel met him, and was made by him a duke. The forces with the lieutenant were a motley rabble of more than 100,000, nearly all on foot, with scarcely a musket amongst them, being armed chiefly with iron-pointed poles, and heavy clubs. James wisely dismissed most of them, keeping thirty-five regiments of infantry, and fourteen of cavalry, while his artillery amounted to only sixteen pieces.

On reaching Dublin he summoned a Parliament to meet in May, and then proceeded to attempt the reduction of Londonderry and Enniskillen, the only two towns in Ireland that remained faithful to William.

The Siege of Londonderry (or Derry), April–July, 1689.—The most celebrated siege in British history.—*Royalists victorious.*

Royalist Governors of Derry,—The Rev. Geo. Walker,
Major Baker.

Jacobite commanders,—James II.; Count Rosen; and General Maumont. Maumont then had the sole command, to which Richard Hamilton succeeded on Maumont's death. Count Rosen finally superseded Hamilton.

Lundy, Governor of Londonderry, when James landed, sent to promise the latter to surrender the town on the ex-monarch's approach. This intention was, however, discovered, and Lundy with difficulty escaped. Walker, a Presbyterian minister, and Baker, were then chosen governors by the citizens, who unanimously determined that, in spite of the weakness of the fortifications, and their possessing only 20 cannon, nothing should induce them to yield. When James, ignorant of Lundy's detection, approached the walls, expecting the gates to be thrown open to him, he was greeted by shouts of "No surrender!" and a sharp cannonade, which killed an officer at his side, and forced him to retire.

After several fruitless attacks, the siege was constituted

a blockade,—a boom being thrown across the Foyle to bar the entrance of ships from England, whither the inhabitants had sent for aid.

The gallant defenders, animated especially by the fervid appeals and untiring toil of Walker, held out with the utmost firmness, in spite of losses caused by the enemy, and by famine and pestilence. At length they were reduced to subsist on horse-flesh, dogs, rats, starch, hides, and all kinds of garbage,—while, to add to their distress, a relief-squadron from England, under the command of Kirke, (of Sedgemoor infamy), after appearing in the Lough, was compelled to retire.

Rosen, enraged at the obstinate defence, at length declared that unless the town capitulated within a given time, he would force all the Protestants in the neighbouring country under its walls. Derry did not surrender, and Rosen kept his word, wasting the vicinity for ten miles round, and driving 4000 provisionless, and nearly naked, men, women, and children beneath the ramparts of the enemy, who added to the misery of the wretched herd, by firing upon them at their approach, under the impression that they were foes.

The town could do nothing to aid the miserable troop, —numbers of them perished every hour from exposure and hunger,—and though, at the end of the third day of their misery, a message came from James for their release, the majority of them sank under their severe sufferings.

At length the crisis came. Starvation or surrender was imminent, when again Kirke appeared with a frigate, and two ships laden with provisions and stores. Convoyed by the man-of-war, the two merchant vessels sailed in safety past the batteries on the banks of the Lough. One of them then bore straight down upon the boom, with a view to break it, and so effect a passage to the town. The boom snapped; but the precious freighted vessel rebounded and ran ashore. The enemy opened a hot fire upon her, and advanced to board her; but the recoil of her guns, as she cannonaded the approaching force, re-floated her, and she reached the town in safety,—the other vessel having, meanwhile, passed through the broken boom, and brought relief to the famine-stricken garrison, who welcomed the succour with frantic joy.

Rosen had already contemplated raising the blockade, for he had lost 8000 men out of a force of 20,000 ; and, owing to the wetness of the season, his trenches were full of water, and disease was raging amongst his soldiers. The relief of Londonderry decided his purpose. The vessels passed the boom on July 30,—on the next day Rosen favoured the town with a farewell cannonade,—and on August 1 the siege was raised, after lasting 105 days, and costing Londonderry the loss of 3600 of its garrison, and quite 8000 of its other inhabitants.

Meanwhile, a large force had been sent to capture Enniskillen. It was met by the Protestants of the town at

Newton Butler, (Fermanagh), 1689, on the same day that Derry was relieved.—*Royalists victorious.*

Royalist commanders,—Colonels Wolseley, and Berry.

Jacobite commander,—Viscount Mountcashel, (wounded, and captured).

The Jacobites lost 1,500 slain, 500 drowned, (in fleeing), in Lough Erne, and 400 prisoners,—the Royalists having only 20 killed, and 50 wounded.

While the *Siege of Derry* was proceeding, James went to Dublin to meet the Parliament which he had ordered to assemble. It was a packed and venal Assembly, and James readily obtained its consent to a number of measures which clearly showed him to be the same tyrannical bigot as ever.

The chief of these measures were :—

1. *The Repeal of the Acts of Settlement.*
2. *The confiscation by him of the estates of all absentee proprietors above the age of 17.*
3. *The transference of most of the tithes, from the Protestant, to the Papist, clergy.*

The task of reducing Ireland was now entrusted to **Marshal Schomberg**, who landed, with 10,000 men, in August, 1689, near Donaghadee.

Carrickfergus, Belfast, Newry, and Dundalk were captured by him, but the inefficiency of the bulk of his forces compelled him to abstain from a general action with James, and he accordingly fortified a camp near Dundalk,—where, however, the marshy ground, and the want of tents, clothing, and provisions, induced a pestilence which slew, or prostrated, one-half of the Marshal's army. His

dispositions, however, were so well made that no attack was attempted upon his camp, whither he had been followed by the enemy, who, on the approach of winter, retired. Schomberg thereupon went into winter quarters in and around Lisburn.

Seeing that no head-way was being made against James, William now resolved to pass over, and himself undertake the chief command.

In the middle of June, 1690, William landed at Carrickfergus, and with a mixed force of 36,000 English, Dutch, and Germans, joined Schomberg, and hastened to offer battle to James, who was at the head of an army composed of 20,000 Irishmen, and 10,000 French auxiliaries under Lauzun.

James retreated before the enemy, until he had crossed to the S. side of the Boyne, near Drogheda. Here he chose a steep and hilly position, strongly entrenched himself,—and awaited William's onset.

The King reached the river on June 30, and encamped on its N. bank, in face of the foe. After a keen reconnoitre, during which his shoulder was grazed by a cannon-ball, William decided to cross, and attack James.

On July 1, accordingly, was fought

The Battle of the Boyne, 1690.—*Royalists victorious.*

Royalist commanders,—William III.; Schomberg, (slain).

Jacobite commanders,—James II.; Comte de Lauzun;
Richard Hamilton.

James's army was drawn up in two lines,—his left being guarded by a bog, and Dromore and Duleek Pass being in his rear. William's forces crossed the river in three divisions;—Schomberg commanding the centre which immediately faced the enemy,—William being at the head of the left wing,—and young Schomberg leading the right.

The onset was everywhere successful. The infantry fled in panic, and were followed by the cavalry, after these had, under Hamilton, made a determined, though brief stand.

The slaughter on both sides was comparatively trifling,—the Jacobites losing 1,500, and the Royalists only 500. Schomberg's death was, however, a heavy calamity. Amongst the Royalists slain was also the Rev. Geo.

Walker, the hero of Derry, who insisted, spite of William's remonstrances, in being present at the battle, and whose fate the King declared "served him right."

James took no personal share in the engagement,—and when he found the next day that his army had disbanded during the night, fled to Kinsale, and embarked for France. William, however, showed himself on this eventful day, "the bravest of the brave,"—fighting heroically wherever the battle was hottest.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS.

France.	Germany.	Spain.	Russia.
LOUIS XIV.	LEOPOLD I.	CHARLES II.	PETER, THE GREAT.

Pope.

ALEXANDER VIII.

GENERAL NOTES.

GOVERNMENT.

The *distinctive feature* of the Period is the arduous and continuous *struggle*, on the part of the people, *against* the *arbitrary and unconstitutional government* of their rulers.

Two great causes were influential in exciting this position :—

1. Owing chiefly to the facilities granted by Henry VII. for the alienation of land, wealthy and middle-class men had been enabled to buy the estates of old, but needy, noble families. Thus, there had arisen a *new landed gentry*,—untrammelled by ancient traditions and prejudices, and of independent habits of thought and speech. It was this stamp of men that formed the majority in the Commons at the end of the Tudor, and during the Stuart, Period. They had already shown an undaunted front to Elizabeth, and were not likely to yield to the wild pretensions of James I. and his House.

2. The *Reformation* had given a marvellous impulse to free thought and enquiry, and rendered the people eager for civil, as well as religious, liberty.

These causes were at work, to some extent, during the second half of the Tudor period, but never brought about any serious misunderstanding between people and sovereign, owing to the able and determined character of that dynasty,—and to their wisdom in contenting “themselves with practical triumphs.” Elizabeth, indeed, in whose reign these influences had become more powerful than in those of her predecessors, met with strenuous opposition at times from the Commons. But she had the rare sagacity to yield at the critical moment, and that so gracefully as to win for herself fresh regard and affection.

The Stuarts had to encounter a stronger national love of freedom and opposition to tyranny than the Tudors had,—while, at the same time, their pretensions were higher, and were made, by them, an “abstract question of principle”—and their ability, judgment, and will, were infinitely weaker than those of the preceding dynasty.

Under such circumstances, the troubles that arose during this period were inevitable.

The chief source of the unconstitutional acts of the early sovereigns of the Stuart Line, was their firm belief in the “Divine right of kings,” on which doctrine James I. was almost crazed, and which he effectually transmitted to his son.

The former found, however, Parliament firmly opposed to his notions, and determined to reassert the popular rights which had, under the Tudors, been in partial abeyance. He being equally determined, on his side, the reign of the first of the Stuarts saw the commencement of that tremendous grapple between arbitrary sovereign and Commons, (championing the liberties of the people), which issued in the crushing fall of the former.

Under James I. the struggle was, comparatively, tame. Yet, the steady persistence of *Parliament* was far from resultless.—“They obtained,” it is true, only “one legislative measure of importance,” viz., a “*declaration against monopolies*. But they had rescued from disuse their ancient right of impeachment. They had placed on record a protestation of their claim to debate all matters of public concern. They had remonstrated against the usurped prerogatives of binding the subject by proclamation, and of levying customs at the out-ports. They had secured, beyond

controversy, *their exclusive privilege of determining contested elections of their members.*

"Of these advantages, some were evidently incomplete, and it would require the most vigorous exertions of future parliaments to realize them. But such exertions the increased energy of the nation gave abundant cause to anticipate."

At the accession of Charles I., "*a deep and lasting love of freedom had taken hold of every class*, (except, perhaps, the clergy); from which, when viewed together with the rash pride of the court, and the uncertainty of constitutional principles and precedents, collected through our long and various history, a calm bystander might presage that the ensuing reign would not pass without disturbance; or, perhaps, end without confusion."

Charles I. had a higher notion than even his father of his prerogative, (believing, throughout, that he was "fully justified to the arbitrary power that he attempted to exercise"), and, consequently, invaded the nation's liberties to an unprecedented extent, and thus provoked the storm which overthrew him.

When the climax of his mad acts was reached, and Parliament determined to secure full and solid guarantees for future good government and the preservation of the popular liberties, matters might have been arranged on a footing satisfactory to the nation, and not dishonouring to Charles, had it not been that the mistrust with which the King's duplicity had filled the minds of the popular champions led the latter to determine to guard against any future attempt on the part of the monarch to regain the power he had surrendered, by insisting on such extreme demands as made a composition practically impossible, and rendered war almost inevitable.

Of these demands, that for *the direction of the army was the main difficulty.* The control of the forces was an undoubted Royal prerogative, but the circumstances were so critical that, (though, in the abstract, they had right against them), the Commons were resolved, (justifiably, and wisely), to make a small, in order to prevent a greater, breach of the Constitution.

From the death of Charles to Cromwell's expulsion of the "Rump," the Government was in the hands of the

latter. Afterwards, up to his death, the direction of affairs lay, with brief limitations during the sessions of his Parliaments, with *Cromwell*. He was, in his way, as autocratic as the Stuarts,—as shewn in, *e.g.*, arbitrarily dismissing Parliaments, and raising money on his own authority. There is no doubt he saw more clearly than any one living, what was best for the country's interest, and that many of his illegal measures were really beneficial ; but this is no valid excuse for his conduct, especially when it is remembered that he had aided in executing a king for like violations of the Constitution.

Charles II. came to the Throne without any safeguards or pledges having been exacted from him,—and thus he was left free to tread in his father's steps.

Some members of the Commons had wisely urged that those matters that had caused the Civil War should be settled with Charles II., before his Restoration ; but the majority were so joyously eager to see the Throne reëstablished that they negatived the proposition, and no guarantee was obtained from the new King as to his future conduct.

The consequences of this remissness amply justified all forebodings,—for, almost from the beginning of his reign, he made the most audacious inroads upon the Constitution and Laws, and finally ruled autocratically, without a Parliament. Had he not been so devoted to vicious, idle, pleasures, there seems little reason to doubt that he would have proved the most arbitrary of his line.

Happily, however, for the country, the national spirit of freedom which had sprung into active vitality under Charles I., and been matured during the Commonwealth, survived with the Restoration, and so bravely, and successfully, struggled against the tyrannical policy of the King, as to render the Commons the dominant power in the State, and virtually, (though not apparently), give the death-blow to absolute Monarchy.

This reign has been justly termed “the era of good laws and bad government,” for the former of which, and for their gallant struggles against Royal encroachments, the Liberal Parliaments of Charles deserve immortal honor.

James II. was a man of one idea.—He was bent on restoring Roman Catholicism, and making it the national

faith. To this end, almost solely, he directed the exercise of that prerogative in which he, like the rest of his race, believed.

What sort of a ruler he would have been, as a Protestant, we cannot, with certainty, say; but, judging from his principles, and his acts in matters not connected with religion, there seems little reason to doubt that he would have been, under any circumstances, as unconstitutional a ruler as any of the dynasty. The

Revenue—was derived from the Excise duties, (producing, on an average, £585,000 *per annum*), and Customs, (worth about £530,000 yearly), First-fruits, and Tenths; the profits of the Royal domains; forfeitures and fines; and the chimney-tax, (or, "hearth-money," which was greatly detested, because it fell unequally on rich and poor,—was farmed out to persons who collected it with greed and cruelty,—and involved domiciliary visits by the exactors, at sight of whom, approaching, the women used, it is said, to hasten to hide their earthenware, lest it should be seized in default of their paying-up): this was first imposed under Charles II., and was abolished by William III., who had been beset, on his way to London, after his invasion, by petitions for relief from it.

Under Charles I., the Customs, and the Revenue generally, nearly doubled their previous amount. The total Royal income, before the meeting of the Long Parliament, was about £900,000, of which Customs formed about £500,000.

Under the Commonwealth, the average receipts were £2,000,000—yet the expenditure exceeded this amount.

SOCIAL LIFE AND MANNERS.

Food.—The gluttony and intemperance which had, under James I., distinguished the Court and the upper classes, received a check on the accession of Charles I., whose reign was, in these respects, a great contrast to his father's. During the Commonwealth, the reformation was complete, Cromwell himself setting a striking example of moderation and simplicity in living, dress, &c.

Under Charles II., however, the rich returned to luxurious habits.

The middle classes lived, throughout, comfortably.

The lower classes had their bread, mainly, of rye and barley, rarely tasting meat.

The use of tea and coffee increased, but was confined to the wealthier.

Smoking became, more than ever, a national habit.

Dress.—The male costume which came into vogue under Charles I., and is known as the "Vandyke dress," (owing to its having been that of the period when that artist painted our ancestors), was, decidedly, the most easy, elegant, and becoming, that the nation has ever adopted. Its main features were the drooping, plumed, hat; the long lace collar; the doublet, with slashed sleeves; the trunk-hose; and rosetted shoes.

The difference between the garb of the gentry and the middle-class—the Cavaliers and the Puritans—consisted more in the material, cut, and degree of ornament, than in the general style: some of the latter, indeed, vied with the former in the article of apparel. It was only a portion of the Parliamentary forces, (*viz.*, that more immediately under the influence of Cromwell), that adopted an extreme and studied plainness of dress. The like holds good regarding the fashion of wearing the hair. The Cavaliers allowed their locks to grow to a great length: numbers of the opposite party did the same, and only comparatively few of them had the head shorn to a greater extent than is customary at the present day.

Under Charles II. was introduced the long, flowing wig.

The *female* habit remained much the same as under the Tudors, till the Restoration, when the ladies affected an easy costume, that freely, and to the best advantage, displayed their forms.

The middle classes were arrayed in the same fashion as, but with inferior materials to those worn by, their superiors.

Laborers wore the smock-frock.

Towards the close of the Period, a slight modification, in the direction of the style characteristic of the next century, is observable.

Houses,—were, more and more, built of brick and stone, especially after the Great Fire.

Furniture,—in the best houses, assumed a very ornate and elaborate character.

Paintings began to be employed to adorn rooms.

Towards the end of the Period French models came into vogue.

The abodes of the poor were bare and comfortable.

Amusements.—Under Charles I., horse-racing grew in popularity, and bull- and bear-baiting, (especially the latter), held their place in popular esteem. Rustic sports of all kinds marked the Whitsun and other festivals, and were indulged in on Sabbath evenings.

The *Drama*, too, (especially in the form of the *Masque*), was extremely popular till the Long Parliament "*suppressed*" public stage plays throughout the kingdom, ordering the theatres to be dismantled, spectators fined, and actors whipped at the cart's-tail.

Under the *Commonwealth*, all other amusements were treated with like severity.

The theatres, reopened at the Restoration, were more popular than ever, though they, speedily, became cess-pools of immorality.

Most of the other recreations tabooed under the Commonwealth were restored, horse-, yacht-, and boat-, racing; bowls, (at which ladies, as well as gentlemen, played); and skating, ("after the manner of Hollanders"), being the favorites of the upper, and middle, classes—while the lower orders resumed, with zest, the good old-English rustic games.

Gambling became a national vice under Charles II.

General Remarks on the Condition, &c., of the People, and the Country.—London was, like all the large towns, very dirty, and very badly protected. It abounded in open places, where was thrown, and lay unremoved, all the filth and refuse that was not cast into the gutter. Carriage-way and foot-path were hardly distinguishable from one another. The streets were lighted only in winter, and even then inefficiently. At night, they were guarded(?) by decrepit watchmen,—were infested with robbers,—and were frequented by fashionable young men "about town," whose great amusement was to insult and maltreat the passers-by, and to fight, with drawn swords, with other parties of exquisites whom they might meet. Club and coffee-house life formed a great feature of the metropolis. Here, politics, literary and theatrical matters, and the state of the Funds, were discussed.

The London merchants lived over their shops, which were marked by sign-boards, instead of by numbers.

The country gentlemen were, as a rule, ignorant, foul-mouthed, bores, whose *summum bonum* of life consisted in gluttony, drunkenness, and unlimited sport.

The country clergy, generally, were ill-paid, and despised.

Of the working classes, quite one-half were farm-laborers.

One-fifth of the population were paupers.

Meat was high : wheat cost, proportionally, the same as to-day : "sugar, salt, coals, candles, soap, shoes, stockings," and clothing generally, "were positively dear."

Roads were bad, and travelling was tedious. Stage-waggons and horses were the prevalent modes of conveyance, for both passengers and goods. Gentlemen and ladies journeyed either in lumbering private coaches, or on horseback. The roads were infested by highwaymen, but abounded in excellent inns. Hackney-coaches became numerous in London under Charles I.

A vast amount of disease and destitution existed in London, and the larger towns. Philanthropy was in its infancy, and little heed was paid to vice, misery, and destruction of life. The Prisons were in a disgraceful state. The

Population—of England, towards the end of the Period, was nearly 6,000,000—the most densely-populated parts being the S., and S.W., and the most sparsely-inhabited, the N., Yorkshire, (*e.g.*), containing, at the Revolution, only one-seventh of the total population, (whereas, in 1841, it comprised *two-sevenths*).

London embraced 500,000 ; then came Bristol, (the second city in the Kingdom), with 29,000 ; Norwich, 28,000 ; Leeds, 7,000 ; Manchester, 6,000 ; Sheffield, 4,000 ; and Birmingham, 3,000.

PHILIPS'

EDUCATIONAL CATALOGUE.

ATLASES.

Philips' Comprehensive School Atlas

Of Ancient and Modern Geography, comprising Thirty-seven Modern and Seven Ancient Maps, constructed from the latest and best authorities. The Maps carefully printed in colors. Edited by W. Hughes, F.R.G.S. Accompanied by a Consulting Index, carefully compiled. New and improved edition. Imperial 8vo., strongly half-bound, 10s. 6d.

Philips' Student's Atlas.

Comprising Thirty-eight authentic Maps of the Principal Countries of the World. The Maps carefully printed in colors. Edited by William Hughes, F.R.G.S. With a copious Consulting Index. Imperial 8vo., strongly bound in cloth, 7s. 6d.

Philips' Select School Atlas,

Comprising Twenty-four authentic Maps of the Principal Countries of the World. The Maps carefully printed in colors. Edited by William Hughes, F.R.G.S. With a copious Consulting Index. Imperial 8vo., new and cheaper edition, strongly bound in cloth, 5s.

Philips' Introductory School Atlas,

Comprising Eighteen Maps of the Principal Countries of the World, clearly engraved, and carefully printed in colors. Edited by W. Hughes, F.R.G.S. Accompanied by a Consulting Index. New and cheaper edition. Imperial 8vo., bound in cloth, 3s. 6d.

Philips' Young Student's Atlas,

Comprising Thirty-six Maps of the Principal Countries of the World, printed in colors. Edited by W. Hughes, F.R.G.S. Imperial 4to., bound in cloth, 3s. 6d.

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON, PUBLISHERS,

Philips' Atlas for Beginners,

Comprising Thirty-two Maps of the Principal Countries of the World, constructed from the best authorities, and engraved in the best style. New and enlarged edition, with a valuable Consulting Index, on a new plan. Edited by W. Hughes, F.R.G.S. The Maps beautifully printed in colors. Crown quarto, strongly bound in cloth, 2s. 6d.

This favourite Atlas, which is in use in most of the Principal Schools in Great Britain and the Colonies, contains all the Maps that are required by a Junior Class of Learners, and may be used conjointly with any Elementary Book on Geography. It is, however, more especially designed as a Companion to Hughes' "Elementary Class-Book of Modern Geography," every name contained in which work will be found in the Maps comprising this Atlas.

Philips' Handy Atlas of General Geography,

Containing Thirty-two Maps, with a Consulting Index. Edited by William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Crown 8vo., strongly bound in cloth, 2s. 6d.

Philips' Young Scholar's Atlas.

New and enlarged edition, containing Twenty-four Maps, printed in colors. Edited by W. Hughes, F.R.G.S. Imperial 4to, bound in cloth, 2s. 6d.

Philips' First School Atlas.

New and enlarged edition, containing Twenty-four Maps, full colored. Crown quarto, bound in cloth, 1s.

Philips' Shilling Atlas,

Containing Twelve Imperial quarto Maps of Modern Geography, constructed from the most recent authorities, carefully printed in colors. Imperial 4to., in illustrated cover, 1s.

Philips' Preparatory Atlas,

Containing Sixteen Maps, full colored. Crown quarto, in neat cover, 6d.

Philips' Preparatory Outline Atlas.

Sixteen Maps. Crown quarto, printed on fine cream-wove paper, in neat cover, 6d.

32, FLEET STREET, LONDON; AND LIVERPOOL.

*Philips' Preparatory Atlas of Blank
Projections.*

Sixteen Maps. Crown quarto, printed on fine cream-wove paper,
in neat cover, 6d.

*Philips' Elementary Atlas for Young
Learners.*

Sixteen Maps. Full colored. Small quarto, in neat cover, 6d.

Philips' Elementary Outline Atlas.

Sixteen Maps. Small quarto, printed on fine cream-wove paper,
in neat cover, 6d.

Philips' Initiatory Atlas for Young Learners,

Containing Twelve Maps, constructed from the best authorities.
Imperial 16mo., neat cover, 3d.; with the Maps colored, 6d.;
cloth limp, 8d.; strongly bound in cloth, 1s.

Philips' Atlas of Wales,

Comprising Twelve Maps of the separate Counties. Drawn and
engraved by John Bartholomew, F.R.G.S. Beautifully printed
in colors. Crown 4to., neat cover, 6d.

*Philips' Atlas of the British Empire
throughout the World,*

A Series of Sixteen Maps, with Explanatory and Statistical Notes,
by John Bartholomew, F.R.G.S. New edition, corrected to
date. Imperial 8vo., bound in cloth, 3s. 6d.

Philips' School Atlas of Australia,

Comprising Maps of the separate Colonies, including a General
Map of Australia, and Maps of New Zealand and Tasmania,
constructed and engraved by John Bartholomew, F.R.G.S.
The Maps carefully printed in colors. Crown quarto, bound
in cloth, 2s.

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON, PUBLISHERS,

Philips' School Atlas of New Zealand,

Comprising Eleven Maps, constructed by William Hughes, F.R.G.S.
The Maps carefully printed in colors. Crown quarto, bound
in cloth, 2s.

Hughes's Training School Atlas,

A Series of Maps illustrating the Physical Geography of the Great
Divisions of the Globe. The Maps carefully printed in colors.
New and enlarged edition. By William Hughes, F.R.G.S.,
author of a "Class-Book of Physical Geography," &c., &c.
Medium folio, cloth lettered, 15s.

The Training-School Atlas is a work altogether distinct in character from any
of those previously described. It consists of a series of Maps (sixteen in
number) designed to illustrate, on a scale of large size, and in a strictly clear
and methodical manner, the leading features in the Physical Geography—1st,
of the World at large; 2ndly, of the Great Divisions of the Globe (Europe, &c.);
3rdly, of the British Islands; and lastly, of the Holy Land. The Political
Divisions of the earth at the present time are embodied upon the information
thus afforded, but in such a manner as not to interfere with its clear and
distinct exposition.

Philips' School Atlas of Physical Geography,

Comprising a Series of Maps and Diagrams illustrating the Natural
Features, Climates, Various Productions, and Chief Natural
Phenomena of the Globe. Edited by W. Hughes, F.R.G.S.
Imperial 8vo., strongly bound in cloth, 10s. 6d.

* * This Atlas is intended as a companion volume to Hughes's "Class-book
of Physical Geography."

Philips' Physical Atlas for Beginners,

Comprising Twelve Maps, constructed by W. Hughes, F.R.G.S.,
and adapted for use in Elementary Classes. The Maps very
clearly engraved, and beautifully printed in colors. New and
cheaper edition. Crown quarto, stiff cover, 1s.; cloth
lettered, 1s. 6d.

* * This Atlas is intended to accompany "Phillips' Elementary Class-Book of
Physical Geography."

Philips' School Atlas of Classical Geography,

A Series of Eighteen Maps, constructed by William Hughes,
F.R.G.S., and engraved in the first style of the art. The
Maps printed in colors. A carefully compiled Consulting
Index accompanies the work, in which is given the *modern* as
well as the ancient names of places. Medium quarto, bound
in cloth, 5s.

32, FLEET STREET, LONDON ; AND LIVERPOOL.

Philips' Handy Classical Atlas,

A Series of Eighteen Maps, constructed by W. Hughes, F.R.G.S.; clearly and distinctly engraved, and beautifully printed in colors. Medium 8vo., cloth lettered, 2s. 6d.

Philips' School Atlas of Scripture Geography,

A Series of Twelve Maps, constructed by William Hughes, F.R.G.S., and engraved in the best style. The Maps carefully printed in colors. New and cheaper edition. Crown 4to., in stiff cover, 1s.; cloth lettered, 1s. 6d.; with a valuable Consulting Index, and strongly bound in cloth, 2s. 6d.

Philips' Smaller Scripture Atlas,

Containing Twelve Maps, constructed by William Hughes, F.R.G.S. The Maps beautifully printed in colors. Imperial 16mo., illustrated cover, 6d.; cloth lettered, 1s.

OUTLINE AND BLANK
ATLASES.

Philips' Atlas of Outline Maps,

For the use of Schools and for Private Tuition. Printed on fine Drawing Paper. Size—11 inches by 13 inches. Three Series, each containing Thirteen Maps, stitched in a neat cover, 3s.

Philips' Atlas of Blank Projections,

With the Lines of Latitude and Longitude, intended for the use of Students learning to construct Maps. Printed on fine Drawing Paper. Size—11 inches by 13 inches. Three Series, each containing Thirteen Maps, stitched in a neat cover, 3s.

Hughes's Atlas of Outline Maps,

With the Physical Features clearly and accurately delineated; consisting of Eastern Hemisphere—Western Hemisphere—Europe—Asia—Africa—North America—South America—Australia—The British Islands—England and Wales—Scotland—Ireland—France—Spain—Germany—Italy—Greece—India—Palestine. Size—21 inches by 17 inches. Medium folio, bound in cloth, 7s. 6d.

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON, PUBLISHERS,

Hughes's Atlas of Blank Projections,

Containing the same Maps as in the "Outline Atlas," and corresponding in size and scale. Size—21 inches by 17 inches. Medium folio, bound in cloth, 7s. 6d.

Philips' Imperial Outline Atlas.

Size—11 inches by 13 inches. Printed on Drawing Paper. Two Series, each containing Twelve Maps, stitched in neat cover, 1s.

Philips' Imperial Atlas of Blank Projections.

Size—11 inches by 13 inches. Printed on Drawing Paper. Two Series, each containing Twelve Maps, stitched in neat cover, 1s.

Philips' Outline Atlas for Beginners,

Being Outlines of the Maps in Philips' "Atlas for Beginners." Size—10 inches by 8 inches. Printed on fine Drawing Paper. Two Series, each containing Sixteen Maps, demy quarto, stitched in neat cover, 1s.

*Philips' Atlas of Blank Projections for
Beginners,*

Uniform in size and scale with the "Outline Atlas." Size—10 inches by 8 inches. Printed on fine Drawing Paper. Two Series, each containing Sixteen Maps, demy quarto, stitched in neat cover, 1s.

Philips' Outline Atlas,

For Students Preparing for the Oxford or Cambridge Local Examinations. In neat cover. Junior Classes, 1s. 6d.; for Senior Classes, 2s.

EDUCATIONAL MAPS.

Philips' Series of Large School-room Maps.

With the Physical Features boldly and distinctly delineated, and the Political Boundaries carefully colored. Size—5 feet 8 inches by 4 feet 6 inches. Mounted on rollers and varnished. Constructed by William Hughes, F.R.G.S.

LIST OF THE MAPS.

Price Sixteen Shillings each.

THE WORLD IN HEMI-
SPHERES.
EUROPE.
ASIA.
AFRICA.
NORTH AMERICA.
SOUTH AMERICA.

AUSTRALIA.
NEW SOUTH WALES.
ENGLAND AND WALES.
SCOTLAND.
IRELAND.
PALESTINE.
INDIA.

Price Twenty-one Shillings each.

THE WORLD ON MERCA-
TOR'S PROJECTION.
THE BRITISH ISLANDS.
NEW ZEALAND, by Dr.
Hector and Thos. A. Bow-
den, B.A.

OCEANIA, on a Scale of two
degrees to an inch, shewing
the situation of New Zealand
and the Australian Colonies
relatively to the shores of
Asia and North America,
with the intervening Islands.

Supplementary Maps to the Series.

SCHOOL WALL MAP OF THE WORLD, ON GALL'S
CYLINDRICAL PROJECTION. Drawn and engraved by
John Bartholomew, F.R.G.S. Size—6 feet 6 inches by 4 feet
7 inches. Mounted on rollers and varnished, £1 5s.

PHILIPS' INDUSTRIAL MAP OF ENGLAND AND
WALES, with part of SCOTLAND; showing the Lines of
Railway, the Seats of the Principal Manufactures, and the
Districts of Mines and Minerals; distinguishing Canals and
Navigable Rivers, tracing the Tracks of Foreign and Coasting
Steam Vessels, marking the Position of Lighthouses, &c.
Constructed from the most authentic sources, and revised by
William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Size—6 feet by 4 feet 9 inches.
Mounted on rollers and varnished, £1 5s.

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON, PUBLISHERS,

Philips' Smaller Series of School-room Maps.

Size—3 feet by 2 feet 6 inches. Mounted on rollers and varnished, each 7s. 6d.

LIST OF THE MAPS.

Eastern Hemisphere.
Western Hemisphere.
Europe.
Asia.
Africa.
North America.
South America.

Australia.
New Zealand.
England and Wales.
Scotland.
Ireland.
Palestine.
Wanderings of the Israelites.

The above are reductions of the large series, constructed by William Hughes, F.R.G.S., and are designed for use in Private Schools and Families. They are clearly and distinctly engraved, and embody an amount of information not to be had in any similar series of Maps.

Philips' New School Maps of the Counties of England.

Prepared expressly for use in Public Elementary Schools, to meet the requirements of the New Code; the Physical Features are boldly delineated, and the style of Engraving is clear and distinct; the Railway System is a prominent feature, and every necessary detail has been carefully given.

LANCASHIRE AND CHESHIRE. Size—5 feet 8 inches by 4 feet 6 inches. Reduced from the Ordnance Survey. Drawn and engraved by John Bartholomew, F.R.G.S. Scale—1½ mile to one inch. Mounted on rollers and varnished, 16s.

LANCASHIRE. Size—37 inches by 54 inches. Reduced from the Ordnance Survey. Drawn and engraved by John Bartholomew, F.R.G.S. Scale 1½ mile to one inch. Mounted on rollers and varnished, 10s. 6d.

YORKSHIRE. Size—37 inches by 54 inches. Reduced from the Ordnance Survey. Drawn and engraved by John Bartholomew, F.R.G.S. Scale—3 miles to one inch. Mounted on rollers and varnished, 10s. 6d.

CHESHIRE. Size—33 inches by 44 inches. Reduced from the Ordnance Survey. Drawn and engraved by John Bartholomew, F.R.G.S. Scale—1½ mile to one inch. Mounted on rollers and varnished, 7s. 6d.

STAFFORDSHIRE. Size—35½ inches by 54 inches. Reduced from the Ordnance Survey. Drawn and engraved by John Bartholomew, F.R.G.S. Scale—2½ miles to 1 inch. Mounted on rollers and varnished, 12s.

* * *Other Counties in Preparation.*

32, FLEET STREET, LONDON ; AND LIVERPOOL.

PHILIPS'
SERIES OF READING BOOKS

FOR USE IN

Public Elementary Schools.

EDITED BY

JOHN G. CROMWELL, M.A.,

PRINCIPAL OF ST. MARK'S COLLEGE, CHELSEA.

Specially adapted to the requirements of the New Code.

PRIMER	80 pp., strongly bound in cloth...	0	6
FIRST BOOK—Part I.	96 pp., strongly bound in cloth...	0	6
FIRST BOOK—Part II.	96 pp., strongly bound in cloth...	0	6
SECOND BOOK	160 pp., strongly bound in cloth...	0	9
THIRD BOOK.....	208 pp., strongly bound in cloth...	1	0
FOURTH BOOK.....	288 pp., strongly bound in cloth...	1	4
FIFTH BOOK	320 pp., strongly bound in cloth...	1	9
SIXTH BOOK	352 pp., strongly bound in cloth...	2	0
POETICAL READING BOOK	352 pp., strongly bound in cloth...	2	6
FIRST POETICAL BOOK	160 pp., strongly bound in cloth...	1	0

The present entirely New Series of Reading Books has been prepared with much care and labour under the personal supervision of the Editor; and it is believed everything has been done which experience in teaching could suggest to adapt them to the educational requirements of the present time.

The special aim of the Publishers has been to produce thoroughly good and durable books: they direct the attention of Teachers and School Managers to the *strength of the sewing and firmness of the binding*, both important features, which cannot fail to recommend them for use in Elementary Schools.

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON, PUBLISHERS,

Brewer's Elementary English Grammar,

Including the Analysis of Simple Sentences. Foolscap 8vo., stiff cover, 4d.

Brewer's Outlines of English History,

For the use of Students preparing for Examination. Foolscap 8vo., cloth, 6d.

Crawley's Historical Geography,

For the use of Pupil Teachers, Students in Training Colleges, and Pupils preparing for the Civil Service Examinations. New Edition, by W. J. C. Crawley. Foolscap 8vo., cloth, 2s.

DAVIES' SCRIPTURE MANUALS.

Designed for the use of Pupils preparing for the Oxford and Cambridge Local Examinations. By J. Davies, University of London.

Uniformly Printed on Foolscap 8vo., bound in cloth.

NOTES ON GENESIS - 1s.
NOTES ON EXODUS - 1s.
NOTES ON ST. MARK - 1s.
NOTES ON ST. LUKE - 1s. 6d.
NOTES ON THE ACTS OF
THE APOSTLES - 1s. 6d.
NOTES ON THE GOSPEL
OF ST. MATTHEW - 2s.
NOTES ON ST. JOHN - 2s. 6d.

NOTES ON JOSHUA - 1s.
NOTES ON JUDGES - 1s.
NOTES ON I. SAMUEL - 1s.
NOTES ON II. SAMUEL - 1s. 6d.
NOTES ON I. KINGS - 1s. 6d.
NOTES ON II. KINGS - 1s. 6d.
NOTES ON EZRA - 1s.
MANUAL OF THE CHURCH
CATECHISM - 1s.

Uniform with above,

DAVIES' MANUAL OF THE BOOK OF COMMON PRAYER, containing the Order for Morning and Evening Prayer; the Litany; the Ante-Communion Service; the Order of Confirmation, and the Outlines of the History of the Book of Common Prayer; with a full explanation of the differences between the Old and the New Lectionary. Foolscap 8vo., cloth, 2s.

Davies' Historical Manuals,

Designed for the use of Pupils preparing for the Oxford and Cambridge Local Examinations.

MANUAL OF THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND, FROM THE DEATH OF EDWARD THE CONFESSOR TO THE DEATH OF KING JOHN (1066-1216). Foolscap 8vo, cloth, 2s.

MANUAL OF THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND, FROM THE ACCESSION OF HENRY III. TO THE DEATH OF RICHARD III. (1216-1485). Foolscap 8vo, cloth, 2s.

MANUAL OF THE HISTORY AND LITERATURE OF THE TUDOR PERIOD (1485-1603) to the accession of James VI. of Scotland. 256 pp. Foolscap 8vo, cloth, 2s.

MANUAL OF THE HISTORY AND LITERATURE OF THE STUART PERIOD, to the accession of William III. and Mary II. (1603-1689). 160 pp. Foolscap 8vo, cloth, 1s. 6d.

MANUAL OF THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND, FROM THE REIGN OF CHARLES I. TO THE END OF THE COMMONWEALTH (1640-1660). Foolscap 8vo, cloth, 1s. 6d.

MANUAL OF THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND, FROM THE RESTORATION OF CHARLES II. TO THE REVOLUTION (1660-1688). Foolscap 8vo, cloth, 2s.

MANUAL OF THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND, FROM THE ACCESSION OF JAMES I. TO THE BATTLE OF THE BOYNE, (1603-1690). Foolscap 8vo, cloth, 2s.

MANUAL OF THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND, FROM THE REVOLUTION OF 1688 TO THE DEATH OF QUEEN ANNE, 1714. Foolscap 8vo, cloth, 1s. 6d.

MANUAL OF THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND, FROM THE ACCESSION OF WILLIAM III. TO THE ACCESSION OF GEORGE III. (1689-1760), and the Outlines of English Literature during the same period. Foolscap 8vo, cloth, 2s. 6d.

MANUAL OF THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND, FROM THE ACCESSION OF GEORGE III. TO THE BATTLE OF WATERLOO (1760-1815 A.D.) Foolscap 8vo, cloth, 2s. 6d.

MANUAL OF ENGLISH LITERATURE (1760-1815), FROM THE ACCESSION OF GEORGE III. TO THE BATTLE OF WATERLOO. Foolscap 8vo, cloth, 2s.

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON, PUBLISHERS.

Taylor's Manual of Vocal Music,

For use in Public Elementary Schools, and adapted to the requirements of the New Code. Forming a Complete Guide to Singing at Sight. By John Taylor, author of "A few words on the Anglican Chant," &c. Crown 8vo., bound in cloth, 1s. 6d.

The work may also be had in Parts—

Part 1.—THEORETICAL, principally for Home Work. Crown 8vo., stiff cover, price 6d.

Part 2.—PRACTICAL, for use in School. Crown 8vo., stiff cover, price 9d.

Taylor's Choice Secular School Songs,

With an Introduction for the use of Teachers, on how to teach Music in Elementary Schools. Crown 8vo., stiff cover, 3d.

Taylor's Child's First Catechism of Music,

Adapted to the Lower Standards of Elementary Schools. Foolscape 8vo., stiff cover, 2d.

Tablet Lessons.

For use in the School-room or Nursery. The Set, comprising 19 royal broadside sheets, in cover, with millboard back and wooden ledge to hang up, 3s. 6d.; the separate sheets, each 2d.

Whitworth's Exercises in Algebra,

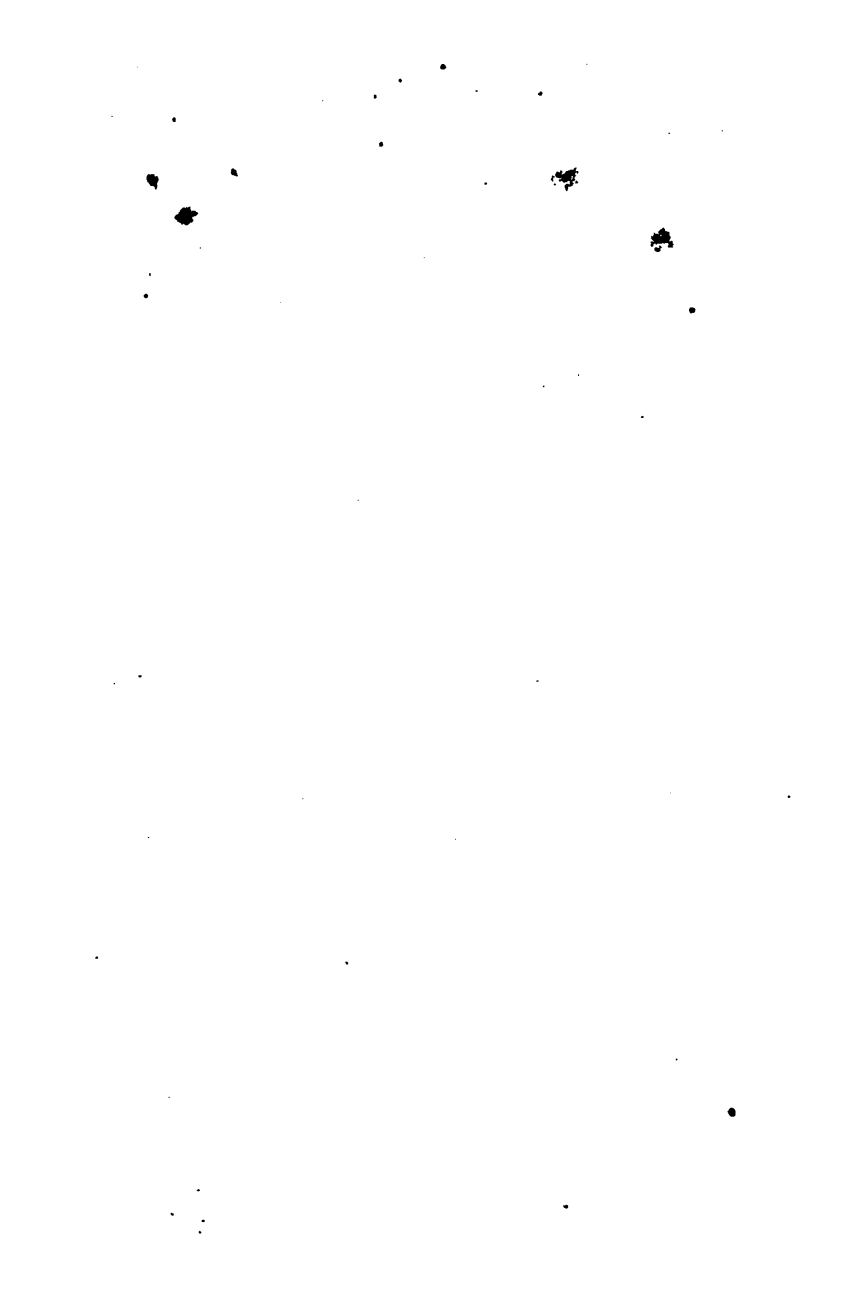
To Simple Equations inclusive. With an Introductory Lesson on Negative Numbers. For the use of Elementary Schools (Government Standards IV., V., and VI.) By W. Allen Whitworth, M.A., Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge, author of "Modern Analytical Geometry," &c. Foolscape 8vo., stiff cover, 6d.; or bound in cloth, 9d.

Worthington's Spelling Card,

For all Standards, a collection of One Thousand Words which are often mis-spelt. On a card ($5 \times 7\frac{1}{2}$ in.) price 1d.

Worthington's Arithmetical Cards.

Arranged in Six Sets, each containing 24 Cards, with Sheet of Answers, adapted to the Six Government Standards. Each Set of 24 Cards, with Answers, 9d.



George Philip and Son, Publishers, London and Liverpool.

GEOGRAPHICAL CLASS BOOKS.

A CLASS-BOOK OF MODERN GEOGRAPHY , with Examination Questions, by William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Foolscap 8vo, cloth	1	6
AN ELEMENTARY CLASS-BOOK OF MODERN GEOGRAPHY , by William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Foolscap 8vo, cloth	1	6
A CLASS-BOOK OF PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY , with numerous Diagrams and Examination Questions, by William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Foolscap 8vo, cloth	3	6
AN ELEMENTARY CLASS-BOOK OF PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY , with Diagrams, by William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Intended as a Companion Text Book to "Phillips' Physical Atlas for Beginners." Foolscap 8vo, cloth, lettered	1	0
ELEMENTARY GEOGRAPHY OF EUROPE , with a Map. By William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Imperial 32mo, neat cover, 2d., or in cloth	0	3
ELEMENTARY GEOGRAPHY OF ENGLAND AND WALES , with a Map. By William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Imperial 32mo, neat cover, 2d., or in cloth	0	3
ELEMENTARY GEOGRAPHY OF SCOTLAND AND IRELAND , with Maps. By William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Imperial 32mo, neat cover, 2d., or in cloth	0	5
OUTLINES OF GEOGRAPHY, FOR SCHOOLS AND COLLEGES , by William Lawson, St. Mark's College, Chelsea. Foolscap 8vo, cloth	6	6
THE GEOGRAPHY OF RIVER SYSTEMS , by William Lawson, St. Mark's College, Chelsea. Foolscap 8vo, cloth	1	0
THE GEOGRAPHY OF COAST LINES , by William Lawson, St. Mark's College, Chelsea. Foolscap 8vo, cloth	1	0
THE YOUNG SCHOLAR'S GEOGRAPHY , by William Lawson. Foolscap 8vo, stiff cover, 6d., cloth,	0	9
A MANUAL OF HISTORICAL GEOGRAPHY , for the use of Civil Service Students, Training Colleges, &c. By W. J. C. Crawley, B.A. Foolscap 8vo, cloth	2	0

George Philip and Son, Publishers, London and Liverpool.

George Philip and Son, Publishers, London and Liverpool.

EDUCATIONAL MAPS.

PHILIPS' SERIES OF LARGE SCHOOL-ROOM MAPS.

With the Physical Features boldly and distinctly delineated, and the Political Boundaries carefully colored. Size—5 feet 8 inches by 4 feet 6 inches. Mounted on rollers and varnished. Constructed by William Hughes, F.R.G.S.

LIST OF THE MAPS.

Price 16s. each.
THE WORLD, IN HEMI-
SPHERES
EUROPE
ASIA
AFRICA
NORTH AMERICA
SOUTH AMERICA
AUSTRALIA AND NEW
ZEALAND
NEW SOUTH WALES

ENGLAND AND WALES
SCOTLAND
IRELAND
PALESTINE
INDIA

Price 21s. each.
THE WORLD, ON MERCA-
TOR'S PROJECTION
BRITISH ISLANDS
NEW ZEALAND
OCEANIA

PHILIPS' SMALLER SERIES OF SCHOOL-ROOM MAPS.

Size—3 feet by 2 feet 6 inches.

Mounted on rollers and varnished, each 7s. 6d.

LIST OF THE MAPS.

EASTERN HEMISPHERE
WESTERN HEMISPHERE
EUROPE
ASIA
AFRICA
NORTH AMERICA
SOUTH AMERICA
AUSTRALIA

NEW ZEALAND
ENGLAND AND WALES
SCOTLAND
IRELAND
PALESTINE
WANDERINGS OF THE
ISRAELITES

The above are reductions of the large series, constructed by William Hughes, F.R.G.S., and are designed for use in Private Schools and Families. They are clearly and distinctly engraved, and embody an amount of information not to be had in any similar series of Maps.

George

London and Liverpool.

